

**HISTORY  
OF  
FALLS COUNTY, TEXAS**

**Compiled by  
Old Settlers and Veterans Association  
of  
Falls County, Texas**

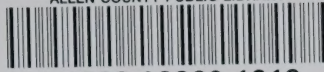


Gc  
976.401  
F19e  
1424866

## GENEALOGY COLLECTION

✓

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 02290 1919





# HISTORY OF FALLS COUNTY, TEXAS



## FALLS OF THE BRAZOS

(Picture by Courtesy of Marlin Chamber of Commerce)

Created in 1850 and comprised of territory around the Falls, the county was named "Falls County" by the Legislature of Texas. (Original Falls was located about two miles southwest of the above. Present Falls reveal wear-and-tear of millions of cubic feet of water passing over it.)

Compiled by  
Old Settlers and Veterans Association  
of Falls County, Texas

ROY EDDINS, EDITOR

Copyright 1947  
ROY EDDINS, EDITOR

ROSEMARY WATSON CO. INC.  
DE  
THE PUBLIC LIBRARY



## PREFACE

Ever since the Old Settlers Association (later the Old Settlers and Confederate Veterans Association and, still later, the Old Settlers and Veterans Association) was organized there have been longings for the Association to provide a History of Falls County. Some efforts were made, but people were busy creating history, and it was not written. This volume is an answer to a county-wide desire. It may be revised for future editions.

The Association is especially indebted to the late J. M. Kennedy, founder and publisher for about fifty-two years of *The Marlin Democrat*, for valuable notes and references. Mr. Kennedy was among those who realized a comprehensive and romantic history of the County should be written. He compiled valuable information with that in view. Through permission of his widow, the late Sallie Jane Kennedy, and his daughter, Mrs. Roy (Katie Lee Kennedy) Eddins, his notes and references were dedicated to this effort.

**1424866**

People of the County have assisted and, especially helpful, were Mrs. Lillian Schiller St. Romain's "A History of Lott and Its Vicinity," containing vital information, which was graciously contributed by Mrs. St. Roman; the Reverend F. P. Goddard, who wrote the chapter on "Proof of Indians in Falls County," having studied extensively Indian arrow-heads and relics gathered from all over the County; Frank C. (Posh) Oltorf, a diligent student of Falls County history, who wrote the chapter on "Under the Confederacy"; the late former Falls County School Superintendent A. W. Eddins, who left many historical notes. To all of these the Association is gratefully indebted.

Other contributors were Mayor E. M. Dodson of Marlin, who permitted reproduction of a rare picture of

the County's court house of 1876, Joe Vlha and S. C. Souther of Rosebud; William T. Curry, Marlin attorney.

Individual members of the Association's Board of Directors deserve credit for enthusiasm and initiation of the movement for the history. Their names appear elsewhere in this volume. Liberal credit also is due late members of the Board, Vice-president S. W. Gaines, Joe B. Turner and G. H. Bargainer.

It is impractical to list the names of all who inspired this effort, since the movement was county-wide.

Unfortunately, both Falls County and Milam County (from which Falls County was created) lost valuable records in fires which destroyed a court house for each county. Many records, too, were lost when the State Capitol burned about the 1870s.

As will be shown in the history, these sources of information were valuable in compiling this history: Z. N. Morrell's "Flowers and Fruits"; John Henry Brown's "History of Texas" (Volumes I and II); Newton and Gambrell's "A Social and Political History of Texas"; "Pen Pictures from the Garden of the World—McLennan, Falls, Bell and Coryell Counties," published in 1893; the State Archives at Austin; the State Land Office at Austin; Falls County Commissioners Court minutes; Falls County Cattle Brands at the County Clerk's office; J. M. Carroll's "A History of Texas Baptists"; "The Texas Almanac"; "The World Almanac"; "The Commission of Control for Texas Centennial Celebrations—Monuments commemorating the Centenary of Texas Independence"; the files of *The Marlin Democrat*; and others, mentioned in the history.

Roy Eddins, Editor



To—

*The Builders of Falls County (Texas) and  
Those Who Fought To Maintain This  
Nation of Which It Is a Part.*

—to the early indomitable pioneers, who came into a wild, dangerous wilderness, withstood the ravages of savage Indians and overcame the tyranny of Mexican despots to lay the foundation for other builders—builders, who came (and will come) after—

—to the soldiers and sailors of the County, who helped perpetuate this nation, including those courageous Soldiers of the Gray, who achieved immortal fame against unsurmountable odds in a Lost Cause, which they believed right under the Constitution of the United States—

*THIS VOLUME IS REVERENTLY  
DEDICATED*

# CONTENTS

|                    |     |
|--------------------|-----|
| PREFACE .....      | III |
| DEDICATION .....   | V   |
| INTRODUCTION ..... | I   |

## CHAPTER I

|  |   |
|--|---|
| EARLY ANGLO-AMERICANS AT THE FALLS.....  | 5 |
| Early Description of Falls — Canoma, Friendly Indian — Robertson's Nashville Company — Robertson's Controversy with Stephen F. Austin — Viesca District Sends Delegates to Conventions — Viesca Townsite Laid-Off — Names of District and Town Changed |   |

## CHAPTER II

|   |    |
|---|----|
| WOES WITH MEXICO — INDEPENDENCE .....   | 23 |
| Viesca's Committee of Safety and Correspondence — Delegates to General Convention of 1835 — "Old Ben Milam" at San Antonio — Ranger Company at the Falls — Delegates to General Convention of 1836 — Viesca Delegate Writes Declaration of Independence |    |

## CHAPTER III

|   |    |
|---|----|
| MORRELL'S ACCOUNT OF LIFE AT THE FALLS.....   | 41 |
| What He Found There — Chases Buffalo on a Mule — Tells of His Efforts to Help — Estimates Population of Texas |    |

## CHAPTER IV

|   |    |
|---|----|
| INDIAN CRUELITIES — PASSING OF THE INDIANS.....   | 61 |
| Elm Creek Fight — James Coryell Killed — Fort Marlin and Bucksnot — Morgan Massacre — Morgan House Described — John Marlin's House Attacked — Battle at Morgan's Point, in Which Chief Jose Maria Wins — Bird's Fight |    |

## CHAPTER V

|  |    |
|--|----|
| PROOF OF INDIANS IN FALLS COUNTY AREA.....   | 79 |
| Falls Area Alluring to Indians — Indians Nomadic — Indian Camps and Trails Indicated — Artifacts |    |



CONTENTS—CONT'D

CHAPTER VI

|  |    |
|--|----|
| MORE TROUBLE WITH MEXICO.....  | 91 |
| Falls Area Men in Dawson Massacre and Mier Expedition — Texas Joins United States — U.S.-Mexican War — Captain Smith Recruits Company at Bucksnort |    |

CHAPTER VII

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| FALLS COUNTY CREATED — COUNTY SEAT ESTABLISHED .....   | 101 |
| Demand for More Counties — Petition for Creation of Falls County — Acts Creating the County — Early Officers — County Seat, "Adams," Selected by Vote, Named Marlin by State Legislature — Court-house Square and Townsite Created — Conflicting Land Grants |     |

CHAPTER VIII

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| UNDER THE CONFEDERACY.....  | 121 |
| County Grows — Cattle Industry Accelerated — Sam Houston Visits County — County Votes for Secession — Recruiting for War — Supplies Contributed — South Overwhelmed — Confederate Veterans Listed |     |

CHAPTER IX

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| CONFUSION DURING RECONSTRUCTION.....  | 159 |
| Negroes Generally Orderly — Judge J. W. Oliver Holds Court and Politics — Citizens React Forcefully — End of Radicalism |     |

CHAPTER X

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| END OF THE PIONEER LIFE.....  | 175 |
| Stage Lines and Roads — Coming of Railroads — New Towns Created — Era of Expansion — Cattle Industry — Politics and Political Parties — Dawn of Scientific Age — Spanish - American War — Roads and Highways — Airplanes — Mechanical Farming |     |

CONTENTS—CONT'D

CHAPTER XI

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| A WORLD AT WAR — WORLD WAR I .....   | 201 |
| Young Men Drafted for War — Exemption Board for<br>the Military Draft — Early Departures for War —<br>First to Lose Lives — Home-Front and War — Re-<br>turn of Men at the War's End |     |

CHAPTER XII

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| PROSPERITY, DEPRESSION AND OMENS<br>OF ANOTHER WAR .....   | 219 |
| Ku Klux Klan — "New Deal" in Government —<br>"Three-Letter" Organizations — Electricity for<br>Rural Areas — Clouds of War — Needs for Defense<br>— Aliens Registered — Men Selected for Service —<br>Home-Front Organized for Defense |     |

CHAPTER XIII

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| SCIENTIFIC WAR STRIKES HEAVILY —<br>WORLD WAR II .....  | 239 |
| "A Day Which Will Live in Infamy" — War De-<br>clared — Defense on the Home-Front — Promoting<br>the War — War Ends — Some Men Return from<br>Armed Forces, Others Leave to Assure Peace —<br>Veterans Organize |     |

CHAPTER XIV

|                                     |     |
|-------------------------------------|-----|
| FALLS COUNTY'S DISTRICT COURT ..... | 257 |
|-------------------------------------|-----|

CHAPTER XV

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| NARRATIVE OF FALLS COUNTY COURTHOUSES ..... | 261 |
|---|-----|

CHAPTER XVI

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| CAPRICIOUS RIO BRAZOS CREATES PROBLEMS ..... | 279 |
|--|-----|

APPENDIX

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| OLD SETTLERS AND VETERANS ASSOCIATION ..... | 291 |
|---|-----|



## INTRODUCTION

**LAND OF TEXAS NAMED.** America was discovered by a Spaniard, Christopher Columbus, and the land, which became Texas, was a Spanish possession for about three hundred years, before it gained its independence and was annexed to the United States. During that time, when Spanish explorers and missionaries were establishing Spanish claims, the land came to be known as "Texas."

A short time previous to 1690 a Spaniard, De Leon, and a Franciscan, Father Massanet (also a Spaniard), established a mission at the Neches River near Weches, a few miles northeast of Crockett, Houston County. In 1690 another mission was established near the first one and, from those events, came the naming of Texas. According to the best authority, up until the time of De Leon and Father Massanet, no name was applied to the territory, although Pinedo, another Spaniard, had mentioned "Amichel" and earlier Spanish maps included the area as a part of Florida. "Apacheria" (Land of the Apaches), too, was applied to the territory.

During the De Leon and Father Massanet missions, according to the story, a Caddo Indian was asked the name of his tribe. He replied, "Tejas," the word meaning friends, or allies. The Indian referred to an inter-tribal confederacy of Caddo Indians. From then on, "Tejas" was applied to the region by the Spaniards, although the exact procedure as to why may not be known. While the name, "Tejas" (Texas), dated to this time, it is interesting to note that Coronado applied the name, "Teyas" to the Indians of North Central Texas (probably the Wichita Caddoes) a century and a half earlier.

**FALLS COUNTY TOPOGRAPHY UNCHANGED.** Topographers and geographers know that the land and soil of Falls County, including its river and streams, is the same as it was when Columbus discovered America (1492) — except, of course, for minor erosions and shifting of streams. There is little known of life in the area until the white people arrived and, in their struggle against the savage natives, they had little time to record it, even then.

When Columbus sailed westward from Spain, he was seeking a new route to India and to prove the earth is round, not flat — as most people of that day believed. When he reached land, after a perilous voyage, he discovered people whom he called Indians, because he thought he had discovered India. How long they had been here is not known, although evidence points to their being here many, many centuries — perhaps, survivals of an ancient civilization.

The Indians continued to control the land and streams in Falls County for nearly three hundred fifty years after Columbus found them, for settlement of America began in the East and nearer the equator.

**CIVILIZATION BEGAN AT STREAMS.** When the first civilized people settled in the wildernesses of the new world, they built their homes chiefly near rivers and streams, preferably the larger streams for a number of reasons. They needed water for their own use and their stock; they wanted the fish in the streams; and streams were partial blockades against the savage Indians. A large stream, across which was a clear view and which was crossed with some difficulty, offered assistance in protecting their pioneer homes.

In Falls County, civilization began at the Brazos River — at the Falls. Who was the first white man to discover the Brazos River and its falls, and when, is a mystery, or legend. It is known that the earliest explorers crossed many streams in Texas, including the Brazos River, which runs north and south through the County. But they had no time to name streams, or record names given by Indians.



## INTRODUCTION

**THE RIVER NAMED.** The name of Falls County's river is Los Brazos de Dios, or, for short, Brazos. Los Brazos de Dios means Arms of God, and the name came, according to legend, because its water saved famished travelers from death by thirst. The most widely accepted legend is as follows: A colony of Spaniards prospecting in the West, near the Rio Grande River, ran out of water and, realizing the drouth existed farther to the west, headed eastward in search of it. In a strange wilderness they crossed many streams, all dry. After a perilous journey, practically famished, many dying, their animals, too, they came to a river, through which flowed clean, cool water. From it they quenched their thirst, watered their beasts and knelt to thank God. The *padre* blessed the stream and called it "Los Brazos de Dios" — the Arms of God. Other legends differ only in detail, all naming the stream because it saved thirsty travelers.





# CHAPTER I

## Early Anglo-Americans at the Falls

**FALLS COUNTY HISTORY BEGAN AT FALLS.** In early times the Falls had become widely known as a place of designation—a place to meet—for adventurers, prospectors, hunters and Indian fighters. “We’ll meet you at the Falls of the Brazos,” the early pioneers and travelers of both Texas and the United States said—when they planned to see each other, or campaign against hostile Indians.

John Henry Brown’s “History of Texas” records that at the time of Dr. James Long’s expedition in Texas (1819), there was a “trading house at the Falls, established by David Long (Dr. Long’s brother) and Captain Johnson.” That there was a trading place there seems plausible, for the Falls was famous at that time. Some light is thrown upon life at the Falls by the Reverend Z. N. Morrell in his “Flowers and Fruits,” some of which is summarized elsewhere in this book. His book contains one of the earliest descriptions of the Falls. He wrote the water fell “about ten perpendicular feet, and the water below abounded in fish. We examined the place minutely with reference to its capacity to run machinery. A few old Texans (his book was written in 1872) remember the stream was quite narrow at this point---.” (The reader will bear in mind the Falls at that time was about two miles southwest of the present Falls, the river having changed its course in the 1860s.)

**INDIANS CLUNG TO THE RIVER.** The Indians clung tenaciously to the rivers and streams of Texas, especially the Brazos River. They were determined to keep the white men from molesting their “happy hunting grounds” and favorite fishing holes. Until many white people came, the Indians held dominion on the river

and, even after white people settled in appreciable numbers, the Indians harassed, murdered and scalped so relentlessly only the sturdiest and bravest remained very long. Even as late as the 1830s, authoritative accounts reveal, only a few white people lived at, or near, the Falls; a few lived at Little River in what is now Bell County, and a few more west of the Colorado River. Between these points and the more thickly settled areas of East and South Texas were vast, treacherous Indian-infested wildernesses, in which the Red Man held sway.

J. W. Wilbarger's "Indian Depredations in Texas" records, "For some reason the Indians fought harder to retain the Brazos country than any other portion of the state. The soil of no state in the Union had been crimsoned with the blood of so many brave defenders as that of Texas—not even excepting Kentucky, the 'dark and bloody ground'." --- "David Ridgeway -- came to Texas -- and had no permanent home. He, in company with another young man left to go to the Falls. When they were almost there they were ambushed by some Indians and the first information they had of their presence was a volley of arrows. Ridgeway fell mortally wounded and the Indians followed his companion for some distance but failed to overtake him. Quite a number of people at this time were killed around the Falls by the Indians. They also robbed the settlement of an immense amount of property and did all they could to break it up. ---"

To the earlier settlers, Indians were "Indians" — cruel, conniving, thieving, murdering, scalping and arrow-shooting. They roamed up and down streams and rivers, shifting from place to place. Some came into possession of guns and ammunition, for evil white men, without conscience, sold them, or traded them, for advantage, temporary and otherwise.

**MANY TRIBES OF INDIANS.** There were many tribes of Indians in Texas, some native, some coming from the East, pushed westward by civilization of the grow-



ing United States. Some came from the West to fight, in efforts to stop the westward march of white people.

In a broad sense, East Texas was occupied by the great Caddo tribes, from which Texas derived its name. In Northeast Texas were the aggressive, nomadic, blood-thirsty Comanches and their relatives, the Kiowas. Both of these tribes were "Arabs of the Desert," pillaging, murdering and scalping, leaving veritable deserts of destruction wherever it pleased them and they were not stopped. In Northwest Texas were the Apaches, of which there were many related tribes, all of whom, too, were dangerous. In the Southeast were the Tonkawa tribes; and in the South the Karankawas; and in the Southwest, the great Coahuilteans. Each of these groups, of course, consisted of many related groups.

Indians were continually at war with each other and with the white people. The result was a conglomerated tangle of wars, massacres, advances and retreats, with which it would have been impossible to keep up, even if one had been on the scene and educated in the affairs of Indians and their tribes. It is easy to understand, when anything happened, the savages were simply referred to as "Indians." When it was possible, names of the tribes were recorded, but even then, there is no proof the record is correct. Indians were "Indians," mostly "no good," the early settlers thought. However, some Indians were great and faithful friends.

**SOME INJUSTICES TO INDIANS.** It is recorded that the earliest settlers frequently employed Indian laborers. But, it was also recorded, they were slow and required constant supervision and watching. Their tasks were the simplest and they possessed little initiative or energy. There were exceptions, of course.

An example of Indian loyalty and error on the part of the settlers, is this story recorded in John Henry Brown's "History of Texas." While it happened in 1833, when the Falls was already famous, it illustrated Indians problems as they existed early and through the 1830s.

**CANOMA BRINGS IN SCALPS.** Among the more peaceful Indians were a small band of friendly Caddos and their chief, Canoma, living much about the Falls and rendering faithful services. "In 1833 a party of Tancahuas Indians, in retaliation for a falsely assumed offense, near the Falls of the Brazos, killed a stranger named Reed and carried off his horse and effects. They were pursued by Canoma with seven of his men. On the eighth day Canoma returned, bringing in seven Tancahuas scalps, Reed's horse and effects and other trophies.

"In the spring of 1835, the faithful Canoma was still about Tenoxtitlan (about thirty miles below the Falls). There were various indications of intended hostility of the wild tribes, but it was mainly toward the people of the Colorado (river), the wild Indian, as is known to those conversant with that period, considering the people of the two rivers separate tribes. The people at the Falls, to avert an outbreak, employed Canoma to go among the savages and endeavor to bring them in for purposes of making a treaty and recovering two children of Mr. Moss, then prisoners in their hands.

"Canoma, leaving his two children as hostages, undertook the mission and visited several tribes. On returning, he reported that those he had seen were willing to treat with the Brazos people, but that about half bitterly opposed forming friendly relations with the Coloradians, and that at that moment a descent was being made on Bastrop on that river by a party of the irreconcilables.

"The people at the Falls immediately dispatched Samuel McFall to advise the people of that infant settlement of their danger. Before he reached his destination the Indians had reached the settlement, murdered a wagoner, stolen several horses and left. Colonel Edward Burleson, in command of a small party, was in pursuit.

"In the meantime, some travelers lost their horses at the Falls and employed Canoma to follow and re-



cover them. Canoma, with his wife and son, armed with a written certificate of his fidelity to the whites, trailed the horses in the direction of and nearly to Three Forks of Little River and recovered them. On his return with the American horses, Burleson and his party fell in with him, but were not aware of his faithful character. He exhibited his credentials, with which Burleson was disposed to be satisfied, but his men, already incensed and finding Canoma in possession of the horses under suspicious circumstances, gave rein to unreasoning exasperation. They killed him and his son, leaving his wife to get home alone, which she lost no time in doing. She reported these unfortunate facts precisely as they had transpired, and they were lamented by the chivalrous and kind-hearted Burleson.

**CHOCTAW TOM, INCENSED.** "This intensely incensed the remainder of Canoma's party, who were still at the Falls. Choctaw Tom, the principal man left among them, stated that they did not blame the people at the Falls, but that all the Indians would now make war on the Coloradoans, and, with all the band, left for the Indian Country."

The same history records that the settlers at Bastrop, including three volunteers from the Brazos area, pursued the Indians, bringing to pass a series of clashes. In months following Indian worries for the straggling outpost at the Falls was almost unbearable. Captain Robert M. Coleman and a company ranged up and down the Brazos and, even, advanced to the spring a few miles south of Waco for an attack on the Tehuacanas there. The wily red men, however, discovered the advance in time and fled. Coleman's band then scoured the country as far as the Trinity River near the present city of Dallas, passed to and down the Brazos — to the Falls, and thence southwards.

**ONE OF MORRELL'S EXPERIENCES.** Typical of Indian troubles at the Falls, also, is this account in Morrell's "Flowers and Fruits": "Near the Little Brazos our

teams were all hobbled and staked --- several turkeys were brought in and a bucket of honey. -- Too hungry to pick turkeys, they were skinned, divided into two pieces and hung on sticks before the fire. This was a meal without bread. Will it be the last? The news was soon received that Harvey and his family, occupying the house near our last camp, were killed by the Indians after we left. These were, without doubt, the same Indians that approached our camp the night before. We felt exceedingly sad after hearing the fate of the unfortunate family, but doubly grateful to God in consequence of our escape the previous night ----"

**WHITE PEOPLE CAME DESPITE INDIANS.** The above accounts are illustrative of the difficulties confronting the early pioneers brave enough to settle at the Falls of the Brazos, Falls County area. People came — but slowly for a long time.

Even before 1800, when Texas was under Spanish control, Spain became alarmed at the irresistible pressure of Anglo-Americans to settle in Texas. They came, despite tomahawks, bows and arrows, scalpings and the terrible atrocities of the savages — despite the cold resistance of suspicious and treacherous Spaniards. Because Spain had bungled its colonial policy, the Mexicans revolted and set up a government of their own. Eventually, Mexico did the same and Texas became a free and independent republic.

**COLONIZATION ACCELERATED.** Before the 1830s, both Spain and Mexico had encouraged colonization of Texas. Moses Austin of Missouri was in San Antonio about the time Mexico threw off the Spanish yoke, petitioning Governor Martinez for a grant to settle American families in Texas. After many disappointments and the help of a friend, Baron de Bastrop, he got it and returned to Missouri, full of hope, only to take sick and die, as a result of exposures in Texas. His son, Stephen F. Austin, took the contract and colonization received impetus.

**ROBERTSON'S NASHVILLE COLONY.** Among the other colonizers of Texas, known as empresarios, Robert Leftwich of Nashville, Tennessee, obtained a grant in which

Sterling C. Robertson, empresario, introduced white settlers into the region from which Falls County was created. He was born in Nashville, Tennessee, in 1785 and, in the War of 1812-1814, served as a major. After receiving his honorable discharge, he continued awhile as agriculturist, but visited Texas and caught a vision of colonization. He organized the Nashville Company of which Sam Houston was a member, bought a contract from Robert Leftwich and introduced one hundred families on the Brazos river, including a number at the Falls of the river, practically at his own expense. At the Falls he established a capital for his colony, naming it Viesca, in honor of Governor Augustin Viesca of Coahuila y Texas.



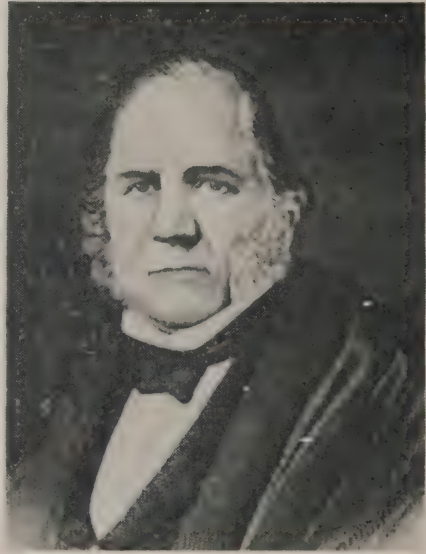
**STERLING C. ROBERTSON**  
(Picture from "Indian Wars and  
Pioneers of Texas")

When the colonies of Texas could no longer endure the injustices of Mexican despots, as a delegate to the General Convention, he signed the Texas Declaration of Independence. He fought for Texas in the decisive Battle of San Jacinto and, after victory, served in the First Senate of the Republic of Texas.

His life was colorful and eventful and he ranks among the founders of Texas. He died in 1842 at the age of fifty-seven.



he proposed to establish 800 families up and down the Brazos River. For a number of reasons, he did not carry out the contract and it was acquired by another Tennessean, Sterling C. Robertson. Robertson had been in Texas in 1823 and, in 1825-1826, perfected plans for colonization by formation of a company of fifty-two stock-holders, one of whom was his intimate friend, Sam Houston, also of Tennessee. Robert Leftwich's contract was obtained April 15, 1825, and it stipulated that the holder was required to introduce families in Texas within six years, or forfeit the contract. Cognizant of this clause in the Leftwich contract, Major Robertson and his Nashville Company worked rapidly and arrived on the Brazos with 200 families in 1830. Sam Houston tarried in Tennessee and became its governor, although his interest in Robertson's Nashville Company has been pointed out as evidence of his interest in Central Texas and Falls County.



SAM HOUSTON

In the "Austin Papers" there is a report on Robertson's Colony by H. H. League, showing its directors and stock-holders. In reproducing the report here, spelling and capitalization and other details of the report, are included:

(H. H. LEAGUE OF AUSTIN)

It is the wish of the Company that they as a Company may be Recognized as the proprietors of the colony, that the persons names assigned to the Memorial may be Recognized as Directors of the company. the company Concisted first of 52 persons towit Nelson Paterson—William Campbell—Ira Ingram—J. Roan—W. Tannehill—Felix Robinson—Thos. Hill—William Barrow—Sam B. Marshall—J. McLoughlin—John W.

Overton—John P. Erwin—Simon Bradford—John Criddle—George A. Bedford—John Waters—Henry P. Lloyd—Alex—Barrow—Horace Green—E. Talbot—Daniel A. Dunham—Peyton Robison—James R. Robertson—John M. Robertson—Pleasant Craddock—William B. Robison—David B. Green—William Harding—Sam Houston—John D. Bowen—A. W. Johnston—Charles Douglas—John Harding—Abram Demoss—Will Williams—John Davis—James R. Baslie—Isaac Watkins—Robert Hill—Leonard P. Cheatham—Will White—James S. Martin—James Pateson—Edward Daniel—Hugh Rollend Josiah Horton—Roger B. Sappington—Abram P. Murray—Joel Parish—S. C. Robison (Robertson)—Sam L. Whorton—Mathew Barrow—

After Andrew Erwin and Robert Leftwich went on to Mexico the Company held a meeting and Twenty two persons more became interested whose names I have not but amongst them is Andrew Hynes—Richard Hyde John Shelby and James Overton who is now Directors of the company—

After the Return of Mr. Leftwich from the Republic of Mexico to the United States those 74 share holders had a meting and Subdivided Each share in to 8 Parts making 592 in all and distributed them amongst their Particular friends in Certificates intending that Each Certificate should entitle a man to Save (sic) a League square of land. they having the Requisite Qualifications prescribed by the Colonization Law—and these persons amongst whome thease Certificates wer divided Paid in the Sum or Sums of money mentioned in the Companies Memorial. it is therefore praied by the company that Every person holding one of those certificates shall have a preference of Settling in the colony to one that none until the 592 is settled and then the ballance of the 800 Families to be settled in the ordinary way they at the same time complying with the laws of the land—

they also desire that the boundery of the colony may be Extended making the Colorado river the Boundery on the west and if any further Extension can be added in any way it will be much advantage to the Colony to do so—and be thankfully received I am Authorized by the company to Vouch to the Government in their name that they will introduce none but honest industrious Agriculturists and stock Raisers the most of whom is wealthy. and that the population shall be Immediately brought into the Country to an amount sufficient to defend that (part) of the Frontier. that all due faith and obedience shall be observed toward the Constitution and laws of the Government and due Respect paid to all Constituted Authorities.

from your Experience in the Business of collonizeing and knowing as you do the Policy of the Government it is much safer for me to depend entirely on your Judgement to point out the Necessary Requisites for the advancement of the colony which I hope you will attend to than to prescribe my self should the Change be made according to the Prayre of the memorial you will pleas to inform me by letter Immediately that I may communicate with the company and be preparing for the Settlement—

San Felipe De Austin the 10 Sept 1837

H. H. League

**WOES OF THE COLONY.** The time of the year the colonists arrived on the Brazos in 1830 is not indicated and whether it was before, or after, the infamous Mexican Law of April 6, 1830, forbidding more Anglo-Americans to settle in Texas, is not as important as the over-all attitude of the Mexican government. For many



reasons, Robertson's colonists suddenly found themselves confronted with unforeseen restrictions and confusions. So many controversies arose, some of the families were not permitted to settle at all; some drifted away and settled lower on the Brazos; some joined Austin's colony, at the invitation of Austin, who was exempt from some provisions of the Law; and some, together with the few families already at the Falls, and those who came later, fashioned the early history of Falls County. As far as known, the vicinity of the Falls was the only place for miles around where people could, in a measure, protect themselves against the Indians and conniving Mexicans.

**CONTROVERSY WITH AUSTIN ARISES.** Along with the confusion already referred to, differences arose between two great colonizers and statesmen -- Sterling C. Robertson and Stephen F. Austin. Robertson had fulfilled requirement of the Leftwich contract, but state officials, on false or malicious grounds, caused unwarranted inconveniences and suspense to him and his colonists. John Henry Brown's "History of Texas" records that many believed Robertson was "outrageously treated (by State officials); and that it was wrong in Stephen F. Austin, then being a member of the Legislature, to secure the transfer of the colonial privilege to himself and Samuel M. Williams, his partner and secretary. The complication was increased when a little later this action was rescinded and Robertson's rights restored; and yet still more, when the latter act, without apparent cause, was abrogated and Austin and Williams reinstated. It is shown, however, that Robertson had introduced over two hundred families and finally proved his claims and received the corresponding premium lands; that he was among the delegates who signed the Declaration of Independence (Texas) and was in the first Senate of the Republic and a member also several years later, abundant evidence that he possessed the confidence of his fellow-citizens in the colony, then (after the Republic was established), known as Robertson and Milam counties, now embracing ten counties."



**ROBERTSON'S REGRETTED DENUNCIATION OF AUSTIN.** Plagued with troubles in establishing his colony, including what appeared to be efforts to annul, or hinder, his contract, also in defense of his rights, Robertson addressed a number of communications to the Governor of Coahuila and Texas, other officials and Congress, in some of which he denounced Austin rather bitterly. Leaders of that day, and days following, regretted those denunciations, although they sympathized with his efforts. It seems it was simply a misunderstanding between worthy and energetic men — misunderstandings which might be expected to arise under the confused and unfair Mexican government.

Austin wrote, "As regards to the upper colony, (including the part of Nashville Colony at the Falls) I have never received one cent. I have had nothing to do with it. My name has been used for benefit of others and I have received all the abuse and calumny. Williams knows about it ----." And, again on December 24, 1834, he wrote, "I have never received one cent out of any of the proceeds of the upper colony and I know nothing about it and have nothing to do with it ----."

**VIESCA DISTRICT SENDS DELEGATES TO FIRST CONVENTION.** Robertson had named the district, in which, were his colonies, Viesca, in honor of Augustin de Viesca, governor of Coahuila and Texas. Other serious vexations plagued the colonists. Everywhere Texans were in a state of turmoil over the Mexican revolution and the immediately following schemes of Santa Anna, to make himself dictator. Mexican officials, too, were alarmed over the stream of Anglo-Americans into Texas and were causing irritations, trying to stop it. Having first encouraged colonization, they had passed the Law of April 6, 1830, aimed to stop it. Resentfulness among the colonies was widespread over unstable and unfair government practices. There was even talk of revolution and several disturbances of significance took place. (The reader will find it profitable to review the history of Texas.)

The people had been favorable to Santa Anna at one time and, taking advantage of this evidence of friendship, and having just grievances, assembled at San Felipe in October, 1832, in the first popular convention of peace-loving citizens for the purpose of petitioning for relief. Stephen F. Austin was elected president of the assembly, at which sixteen districts were represented by fifty-six delegates.

Viesca District was represented by Jared E. Groce, William Robinson and Joshua Hadley. (It is known that Groce lived considerably south of the Falls; it is reasonably certain that Hadley lived near the Falls and it is not known where Robinson lived.) Mr. Groce served on a committee "to draft a petition to the Federal government, praying for a reduction of duties on articles of first necessity imported into Texas, and showing that the reductions would increase the revenue of the government."

Another committee, of which William Menefee, later a signer of the Texas Declaration of Independence and whose descendants (members of the Barclay families) live in Falls County, "petitioned to the State Government of Coahuila y Texas for a donation of land for the purpose of creating a fund for the future establishment of primary schools and to report the same to the convention." (This is early evidence that, while schools were practically non-existent at that time, pioneers were determined to have them, when it became possible.)

Other memorials to the national and state governments were on the following subjects: to secure repeal of the Law of April 6, 1830; to secure a proper settlement of land titles in Eastern Texas; to provide for protection of the frontier against Indians; to secure permission to use the English language in public business, except in official communications to the Mexican government; and to petition for a state government of Texas.

#### **VIESCA'S DELEGATES IN THE SECOND CONVENTION.**

Little, if anything, came from the convention, because the Mexicans were suspicious of assemblies and gatherings of the Anglo-Americans and could not (or would not)

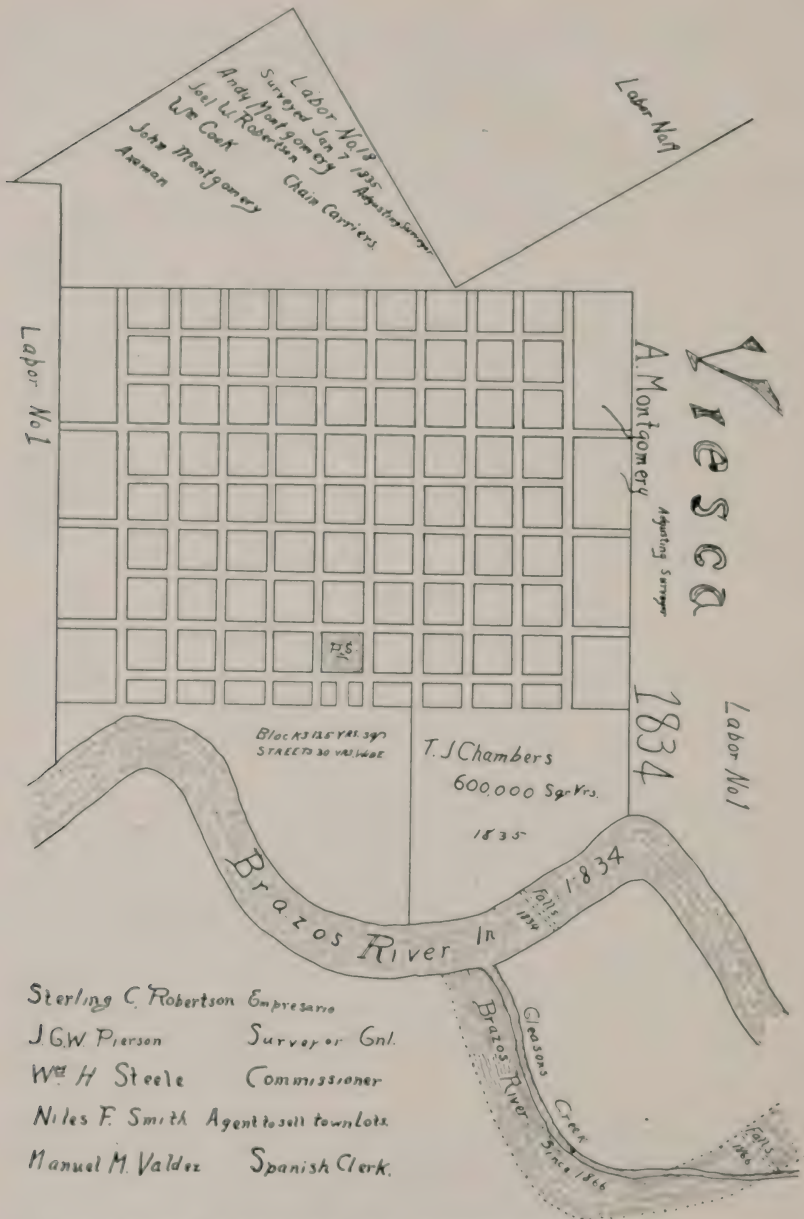
understand the democratic way of doing things. Meanwhile, in January, 1833, Santa Anna became president and again the people believed the time propitious for peaceful action (Santa Anna had started his career as a liberal and friend of the people). Fifty-six delegates re-assembled at San Felipe, April 1, 1833.

To the convention, Viesca District sent delegates. Although records of the proceedings were never printed and were supposed to have been burned in March, 1836, by retreating troops of Texas, from memoranda of its members, John Henry Brown's "History of Texas" recorded a full list, without showing the districts each represented. Jared E. Groce and William Robinson, who represented Viesca in the first convention are shown as delegates and also Sterling C. Robertson. William Menefee was a delegate again; James Morgan, believed to be one of the Morgan's of Falls County, and Alexander Thompson, probably of Viesca and the Falls.

This convention prepared memorials practically identical with those of the first convention, which the Mexicans had ignored. A new one of note, prepared by a committee headed by Sam Houston, who had become a citizen of Texas between the conventions, "adopted a proposed constitution for Texas." In effect, it was a peaceful petition for creation of a State of Texas, the citizens at that time being under the government of the State of Coahuila y Texas and having little part in the government. So important was this petition considered, the delegates voted it should be presented, in person, to the Mexican government and Stephen F. Austin was selected to present it, because of his knowledge of Texas and the Mexican language.

**VIESCA TOWNSITE LAID OFF.** Amid the confusion, Empresario Robertson initiated moves for frontier protection of his colonies and a capital site. Viesca was given as the name of the district in which his colonies resided. Late in 1833, Robertson designated John Goodloe Warren Pierson, his attorney, "to give certificates to those who wish to settle in the Nashville Colony."





### PLAT OF CAPITAL OF ROBERTSON'S COLONY (1834-1835-1836)

Reproduced by Edmund Pierson, Surveyor, from original by his father, John Goodloe Warren Pierson, delegated (1833) by Sterling C. Robertson, empresario, to establish a capital for his Nashville Colony at the Falls of the Brazos. (Above copy was furnished by Falls County Surveyor W. W. Hunnicutt.)

Mr. Pierson came over with Robertson from Tennessee, John Henry Brown's "History of Texas" records, along with other families, whose names are familiar in this area, and members of which live in the county—E. L. R. Wheelock (for whom Wheelock, Robertson County, was named), the Cavitts and others. (The history recorded "and others" and it is regretted their names are not known, for they contributed to the building of Falls County.)

The paper, designating Mr. Pierson, which was in possession of his son, the late Edmund Pierson (long-time secretary of the Falls County Old Settlers and Confederate Veterans Association), reads:

December 22, 1833.

Know all men by these presents, that I, Sterling C. Robertson, Empresario of the Nashville Colony, do nominate to and appoint J. G. W. Pearson (properly, Pierson—Editor) my true and lawful attorney for me in my name to give certificates to those who wish to settle in the Nashville Company, and do all things relative to the said colony, I ratifying all the facts of my said attorney above mentioned.

Sterling C. Robertson

**VIESCA AT THE FALLS OF THE BRAZOS.** Mr. Pierson, a surveyor, taking cognizance of the needs of the Company and his commission to "do all things relative to the said colony," at once designated and laid-out a capital in the area. It was located atop a hill on the west side of the river, overlooking the Falls, which, at that time, was a few miles southwest of the present Falls. (The river changed its course in the 1860s). Sarahville de Viesca was the name given to the capital, in honor of Robertson's mother, Sarah Robertson, and Governor Augustin de Viesca, in whose honor the District had been named. A facsimile of the map of Sarahville de Viesca, made by the late Edmund Pierson, son of J. G. W. Pierson, which was filed in the State Land Office at Austin, appears in this volume.

**VIESCA—1834-1835.** Mr. Pierson surveyed and created Viesca as the capital of Viesca District in 1834, having received his commission in 1833. An 1893 edition of "Pen Pictures from the Garden of the World—McLennan, Falls, Bell and Coryell Counties" lists a number of

early families who secured land within the present 1946 bounds of Falls County and noted "many secured land, however, who did not locate and some claims conflicts arose between the surveys of Chambers, Austin and Robertson, which furnished almost continuous litigation nearly down to the present time, although titles are good now." No effort is made here to reprint those names, since there is no conclusive proof their descendents are living in Falls County, although it is safe to say many do. The book also commented, "Viesca (1835) was a town of probably 200 population and the county seat, and it did not take long for the settlers about the Falls to decide to leave the frontier for the more populous districts to the south and east, both for protection and for fighting. So before the new settlers were fairly established they were compelled to desert their homes, many never to return." (The Rev. Z. N. Morrell, as related elsewhere, recorded some of the early trials at the Falls, although he did not call the place Viesca, nor did he estimate the population. Upon his arrival the second time (Spring of 1836) he wrote, "There were six or eight families in the colony and nearby in the camp some thirty or forty soldiers." At that time, of course, many were in the army of Independence and others had not returned from the Runaway Scrape.)

**EVENTS AT VIESCA, 1834-1835.** While names of families and soldiers at the Falls in the middle 1830s are not known, it is recorded in Texas history that, as an outpost for the protection of Texas, they performed vital services. It is known that Empresario Robertson lived at Viesca about three years, 1834-35-36. He lived there when, as a delegate to the Convention at Washington-on-the-Brazos, he signed the Declaration of Texas Independence.

Other early well-known patriots lived there. "Pen Pictures from the Garden of the World" contains the following: "Among the old Viesca judges was John Martin, J. L. Hood, A. G. Perry, J. G. W. Pierson and others. As an example of business done, the following paper, now in Mr. Pierson's (Edmund Pierson) posses-



sion, will be a good illustration: 'Tello Segundo: Doce Reales. Hailitato por el 1834.—Know all men by these presents that I, Jeremiah W. Simpson of the Town of Viesca, in the colony of the Nashville Company do hereby constitute, and nominate, and appoint by these Sterling C. Robertson of the same place for me and in my name to convey to John G. W. Pierson the league of land which I have surveyed in the said colony and which the new law entitles me to as a colonist, I have received of said Pierson full value,' etc., etc. Signed and sealed and acknowledged in my presence the 1st. Regador in the Jurisdiction of Viesca, the Alcalde being present.—Saml. Gholson'."

**VIESCA SERVED—THEN VANISHED.** Viesca, the home of patriots and builders, appears many times in this history—but eventually faded. It will be seen that after the Runaway Scrape and the Battle of San Jacinto, people preferred to have the river between them and the troublesome western Indians, who were continually raiding and murdering. People re-built, or built, homes on the east side of the river, creating new settlements, one called "Bucksnot" and another, "Fort Marlin." Even these eventually disappeared.

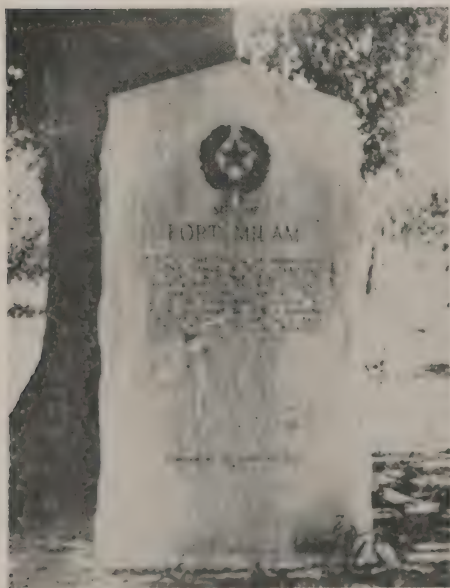
At the Second Convention at San Felipe in December, 1835, the name of Viesca District was changed to Milam District and Viesca became Fort Milam, both names in honor of Colonel Benjamin Rush Milam. Unfortunately for the settlement on the west side of the Falls, it was vulnerable to the Indians. The Reverend Mr. Morrell, experiencing and writing about hardships there in 1835 and 1836, recorded the fort was "overpowered." It was natural he should have felt that way, after all he and his family had suffered there, forcing them to move to Washington-on-the-Brazos, but he failed to measure the full determination and courage of those pioneers. They remained several years after being "overpowered" eventually, however, becoming practical enough to move to the east side for better protection.

Viesca, or Fort Milam, never grew to any extent, but as late as 1850, when Falls County was created, the Legis-

lature expected it to be the county seat. Previously, it had been considered as the capital of Texas, because it was near the geographical center of the state and famous for rendering patriotic service. After 1852, it was practically deserted, although its name was preserved for a time as that of another settlement farther southwest, near the present town of Cedar Springs.

Viesca, or Fort Milam, was located four miles southwest of Marlin atop a hill overlooking the Falls (before the river changed its course in the middle 1860s) on what is known as the "Jones Estate" (Churchill Jones). The land belongs (1947) to Mrs. Ed McCullough (formerly Miss Pearl Jones), one of the Churchill Jones heirs.

On the site of the former town and fort an Historical Marker was erected in 1936 by the State of Texas, upon which is inscribed:



Site of  
FORT MILAM

Built at the Capital of Robertson's Colony named in 1934 Sarahville de Viesca in honor of his mother Sarah Robertson and the Governor of Texas, Augustin de Viesca—Soon after its name was changed to Milam, December 27, 1835. A ranging company built the fort as a protection to the settlers against hostile Indians.

## CHAPTER II

### Woes With Mexico - Independence

**TEXAN DISSATISFACTION GROWS.** While Viesca was under construction and being equipped and while it fought the Indians for the protection of itself and the more populous districts of the East, a wave of dissatisfaction in Texas spread in intensity, because of the irritating acts of Mexico. Stephen F. Austin had gone to Mexico with a peaceful petition for redress of grievances and had gained some concessions, but despairing of others had started home. He was arrested on unwarranted charges and thrown in prison. Texans, already dissatisfied and disturbed, were infuriated. In 1834, the seat of the state government was removed from Saltillo to Monclova by Legislative act, leading to further confusion and, even, establishment of a rival governor and Legislature at Saltillo. Texans recognized the Monclova government, because it seemed to hold a majority of the Legislators, but were disappointed when that government entered into a series of corrupt and squandering practices. Dishonest speculators obtained vast areas of lands, so confusing titles that later the Constitution of the Republic of Texas (adopted in March, 1836) declared most of the pretended sales and grants absolutely null and void.

**JUDGE PAID—HELD NO COURT.** "In 1833," John Henry Brown's "History of Texas" records, "the Legislature at Monclova passed a law creating a judicial system in Texas. There were three districts—Bexar, Brazos and Nacogdoches—with a judge in each and a superior judge, with appellate jurisdiction, for the whole country. Thomas J. Chambers was appointed superior judge, but never held court; yet both a letter from Colonel Austin and the records of the General Land Office at Austin shows that he received thirty leagues (132,840 acres) of



land as one years salary, this being one of the lesser items charged against the State government in squandering public domain."

**MORE ABOUT THOMAS J. CHAMBERS.** Digression is made here concerning Thomas J. Chambers, in as much as Falls County became involved in conflicting land grants, because of "General Thomas J. Chambers, whose official character under the Mexican government allowed him to pick out nice spots all over the State indiscriminately." When Falls County was created (by an Act of the State Legislature—after Texas became a state of the United States), it was necessary for the Commissioners Court to employ agents and attorneys (among whom were Allen H. Morrell and J. G. W. Pierson) to clear titles, because Chambers and others held claims to lands in the county. It was many years before all titles in the County were cleared.

Thomas J. Chambers wielded considerable influence among Texans before and after Texas Independence. At first he advised against Texans becoming alarmed over acts of the Mexican government and wrote, "Certainly a revolution by force of arms is not the sound policy which Texas sought to pursue, when she would stand alone against the whole nation, and the war would assume the aspect of a struggle between foreigners and the Mexicans, and whose end would be all parties would unite against her.—"

A few months later, however, when war was inevitable, Chambers tendered his services and a loan to Texas and, by authority of the provisional government, went to Kentucky to raise troops in which he accomplished much, laboring with patriotic zeal to secure the independence of the country. He was simply one of many whose views changed, as events rapidly convinced Texans everywhere only revolution and independence could bring justice and freedom. Chamber's loyalty and patriotism in the final analysis was never questioned.

**OMINOUS SIGNS FOR TEXAS.** Conditions in the first part of 1835 were turbulent, as more and more people arrived at the conclusion Santa Anna was no friend, but a designing dictator. Texas borders were left exposed without ample protection against the savages, the State government was destroyed "by the minions of a military despotism and constitutional government was overthrown and superceded by the head of despotism, apparently resolved upon annihilation of free government and substitution therefore one-man power, sustained by and devoted to the military, the aristocracy and politico-clerical orders." Civil government, in its freedom, was crushed out. In so far as the people were concerned they could see no hope for an enlightened, free civilization. Their last hope was blasted with the fall of Zacatecas, May 11, 1835. (Zacatecas was a Mexican state, the governor of which, Don Francisco Garcia, resisted Santa Anna's illegal means of establishing himself as dictator and refused to disarm his militia. In a sanguinary battle, he was defeated by Santa Anna's regulars.)

**VIESCA'S COMMITTEE OF SAFETY AND CORRESPONDENCE.** Six days after the fall of Zacatecas, the people of Viesca District were third to fall in line in spontaneous indignation. They were persuaded that Santa Anna would exact the same of Texas as he had of Zacatecas. They met and organized a Committee of Safety and Correspondence, the first step toward organized resistance to what appeared to be a subservance to despotism. John Goodloe Warren Pierson, who laid off the capital of Robertson's colony at the Falls as Empresario Robertson's agent, Albert G. Perry, forebear of many Falls County citizens, (both of Viesca), E. L. R. Wheelock, Silas Parker, Samuel T. Allen, and J. L. Hood were members of the committee. This action is illustrative of the responsiveness and willingness of the people of early Falls County to strike for ideals of order and freedom, upon which Texas and the United States are founded.

Throughout Texas this spontaneous outburst of safety took place. John Henry Brown's "History of Texas" records, "Thus the outside and most exposed populations on three rivers—Guadalupe, Colorado and the Brazos—populations ever distinguished for undaunted courage and patriotism, were first to adopt the means looking to self-preservation and concert of action against the impending destruction of their liberties by Santa Anna. The action was simultaneous, although between these settlements there were no connecting roads and there was no consultation."

**GOVERNOR VIESCA IMPRISONED—ESCAPES.** The state of Coahuila and Texas seemed threatened with destruction similar to that of Zecetecas, so the Legislature authorized Governor Viesca to remove the State archives to Texas and establish a new seat of government. Viesca, with 150 militia and 20 Americans, started, but learned that Martin Perfecto de Cos, brother-in-law of Santa Anna, was ahead of him and understanding difficulties ahead, his courage failed and he returned to Monclova, expressing willingness to bow to the inevitable. Later Viesca tried to escape to Texas, but was captured by Santa Anna's men, along with two other Texans, Dr. John Cameron and Ben Milam, who happened to be in Monclova. Cameron and Milam, too, tried to escape. Sometime later, Colonel Milam effected his escape from Monterey and traveled four hundred miles by night, resting by day. His companions, Governor Viesca and Dr. Cameron, escaped afterwards and reached Goliad in November, 1835. Milam was immortalized in Texas history and, later, Falls County was in Milam District (formerly Viesca District), named in Milam's honor.

**AUSTIN RELEASED.** When the first dissatisfaction and spirit of revolution was born in Texas, Stephen F. Austin had gone to Mexico to effect a peaceful settlement of differences. He was thrown in prison on suspicion, although he was a conservative and one of the best friends the Mexicans had. He was released on bond late in



1834, but detained in Mexico until the summer of 1835, when Santa Anna permitted him to go home, hoping he would glorify him as "the Napoleon of the West" and pacify the Texans. But Austin had been disillusioned. Soon after his arrival among his people, he unequivocally and in strong words expressed himself as favoring complete independence of Mexico.

**VIESCA AT THE GENERAL CONVENTION.** The aroused people of Texas were alert to the dangers to their rights and liberties, yet a spirit of caution prevailed. Meanwhile, Santa Anna decided to send more soldiers to Texas to quell the "rebellious" spirit. General Cos, his brother-in-law, was placed in command of forces in the northern part of populated Texas and General Ugartechea in command of those at San Antonio. Immediately, guns of war were in motion. Although there had been armed conflicts prior to October 2, 1835, the battle at Gonzales on that date is considered the first conflict of the Texas Revolution. Conflicts at Mission Conception and preliminary battles at other places followed in rapid succession. For Texans, everywhere, the time for action had arrived.

A General Consultation was called to meet in October, 1835, at San Felipe. The Consultation was delayed until November 3rd., due to lack of a quorum.

The Municipality of Viesca was represented by John Goodloe Warren Pierson, agent for Robertson's Nashville Company, Albert G. Perry for whom the town of Perry, Falls County, is named, Samuel T. Allen, later killed by Indians, Alexander Thompson, James W. Parker and J. L. Hood.

The Convention, in session November 3, 1835, elected Dr. Branch T. Archer of Brazoria its president and Peter B. Dextor, secretary. Dr. Archer, in an atmosphere of patriotic solemnity, said, "The duties which

evolve upon the members of this body are arduous and highly important; in fact the destinies of Texas are placed in your hands; and I hope that you are now assembled in every way prepared to discharge your duties in a manner creditable to yourselves and beneficial to your country.— In the words of the Hebrew prophet, I would say, 'Put off your shoes, for the ground upon which you stand is holy!' The rights and liberties of thousands of freemen are in your hands, and millions yet unborn may be affected by your decision—."

This was the third assemblage organized for deliberations of far reaching consequences "under American auspices in Texas, having been preceded by the conventions of October 1, 1832, and April 1, 1833. On the previous occasions they had assembled in peace, peacefully to inaugurate measures for its perpetual continuance," John Henry

Brown's "History of Texas" records. "Their overtures were spurned and their messengers of peace wantonly incarcerated in prison, an outrage against humanity and liberty and defying insult to every freeman in Texas. This third body assembled in the midst of war. The clash of arms had already resounded throughout the land—first at Gonzales, next at Goliad, then at Concepcion and around the precincts of ancient Bexar, then under actual siege and two days after their assemblage at Lipantitlan. They had assembled not again as humble petitioners for justice, but as stern liberty-loving soldiers and lawmakers—."



ALBERT G. PERRY



MRS. ALBERT G. PERRY

After serving Texas in its fight for Independence, Mr. Perry served as District Judge, and was known as Judge Perry. The town, Perry, Falls County, Texas, was named in his honor.

**SET FORTH THEIR CAUSES FOR TAKING UP ARMS.**

The first act of the Consultation was to appoint a committee to draft declarations setting forth the causes that "impel us to take up arms and the objects for which we fight." Viesca was represented on the committee by Samuel T. Allen. Another member was William Menefee of the San Felipe Municipality. The declaration adopted unanimously, is a part of Texas history. Summed up, it declared that Santa Anna and other military chieftains had overthrown federal institutions and deprived people of their rights; that Texans were taking up arms in defense of those rights; that Texas is not bound, morally or civilly, to bow to despotism, yet offers its support to any Mexican confederacy similarly opposed to military domination; that Texans will carry on war against said military authorities as long as their troops remain in Texas; that Texas has a right to its own government until proper government is instituted—. It provided for means of defense and ended "we solemnly avow to the world and call God to witness their (the declarations) truth and sincerity, and invoke defeat and disgrace upon our heads, should we prove guilty of duplicity."

**PROVISIONAL GOVERNMENT ESTABLISHED.** The Consultation, of course, provided for a provisional government, consisting of officers and a council. Albert G. Perry of Viesca, represented the Viesca District on the council and William Menefee, the San Felipe (Austin) municipality.

Sam Houston was elected Commander-in-chief of the army, although Colonel Benjamin Milam, for whom, later, Viesca District was changed in name, was a strong contender. Of special interest to the people of Viesca was a provision for establishment of rangers to be placed in detachments on the frontier. While the records do not show specifically that rangers were sent to the Falls of the Brazos, it is presumed they were, for frequent references were made to "rangers at the Falls of the Brazos," including such noted ones as Edward Burleson, George B. Erath, James Coryell and others.



**UNITY OF PURPOSE PREVAILS — TEMPORARILY.** The Consultation completed its labors on November 14th, and the new Provisional Governor, Council and other government officials, including the Commander-in-Chief, Sam Houston, energetically set to work enacting provisional laws and providing for defense of the country to bring order out of chaos. Temporarily, harmony prevailed—but more confusion was destined to follow.

It is known that people of the Falls area were enlisted in the services of Texas, but the number is unknown. Still an outpost, protecting itself and the settlements to the east and south, the number of men contributed to the Texas army is presumed to have been limited. The fort at the Falls continued on the alert—with even greater zeal.

**"OLE BEN MILAM" SEIZES SAN ANTONIO.** Although Sam Houston was elected Commander-in-chief at the Consultation at San Felipe in November, 1835, Colonel Benjamin Rush Milam, in whose honor the name of Viesca District was changed, was a strong contender. When Stephen F. Austin was selected to seek aid of the United States, Edward Burleson became commander of forces in the vicinity of San Antonio. Burleson's men had declared they would never leave San Antonio until they had taken it from the Mexicans under command of General Cos, Santa Anna's brother-in-law, but in view of great odds and superior numbers of Mexicans, a consultation was held and it was decided, due to insufficient equipment, it would be wiser to retire. This was about to take place when Colonel Milam returned from a perilous scouting trip to the West. A deserter reported the Mexican garrison was disorganized, easy to surprise and might be taken.

Colonel Milam, who did not know the meaning of fear, drew a line upon the ground with his sword and called in a stentorian voice, "Who will go into San Antonio with Ole Ben Milam?" About three hundred patriots stepped across the line. Plans went into action (December 3, 1835) and before the dawn of December 5th., the Texans had established themselves in the outer parts of the city. After a strange fight, both Mexicans

and Texans avoiding the streets as much as possible, the Texans won their objective and on December 11th., Cos capitulated. He gave his parole not to resist reestablishment of the federal constitution of 1824 and agreed to retire, with his officers and men, to Mexico.



(Statue)  
**BENJAMIN RUSH MILAM**  
Courthouse Square, Cameron, Texas

Ben Milam lost his life in the battle—"a fall that called forth lamentation and sorrow in every household in Texas and not in Texas alone, for Kentucky mourned her patriot—all felt that a loyal and unselfish champion of human rights had fallen—to be remembered in generations to follow, embodiment of all that constitutes the noble, the brave and the true in man."

Following the surrender of Cos and his departure for Mexico, together with other victories for the Texans, by the end of 1835 not a Mexican troop remained in Texas. For a while, Texas was in command of its own destiny.



**EVENTS MOVE SWIFTLY.** After the General Consultation in October, 1835, at which a Provisional Government was established, General Houston exercised his prerogatives and devoted his energies to improving and coordinating the army forces for the struggle everyone saw coming. Santa Anna, enraged because his troops had been driven from Texas, was determined upon wiping out the "traitors" and bringing to an accounting those who had opposed his schemes. He began recruiting a new Mexican army with plans for invading Texas. With a large force of Mexicans, he did invade, personally in command, as subsequently related.

It was evident everywhere that the struggle was approaching a crisis, but many Texans were indifferent. Officers of the army, consisting of volunteers, were handicapped holding the army together, since many of the men felt their families needed them at home. Provisional Government officials were differing and criticizing each other, the government, itself, and the army officials. Santa Anna, with a unified command and superior numbers, held great advantages. Texans suffered one reverse after another, while General Houston pleaded in vain for concerted support of his command. His volunteer army lacked discipline.

**RANGER COMPANY AT THE FALLS.** Ever alert to danger, both from the Indians and the Mexicans, on January 17, 1836, a ranger company was organized at Viesca with Sterling C. Robertson as captain; John F. Graves, first lieutenant; M. B. Shackelford, second lieutenant; Thomas H. Barrow, first sergeant; Philip Walker, second sergeant; Warren Lyman, third sergeant; Calvin Boales, fourth sergeant; and James Hudson, Enoch M. Jones, Moses Griffin and G. W. Morgan, corporals, according to Mrs. Lillian Schiller St. Romain, quoting from the Muster Rolls in the Central Land Office at Austin. Privates of the company were: Ezra Webb, John Wilkinson, John Walker, John B. Webb, Thomas R. Webb, Andrew J. Morgan, Daniel Monroe, John Martin, Jesse Momifor, John Morgan, Robert Moffitt, William Moffitt, William J. Morgan, Edward



McMillen, Hardin McGrew, Jeremiah McDonald, James McMillen, John McLennan, August W. Cook, Eli Chandler, Francis Childress, James Connall, Nathan Campbell, Patrick Connell, Robert Childress, Willis Collins, David W. Campbell, Michael Castleman, David Darson, James Dunn, Britton Darson, Elijah S. C. Robertson (son of Sterling C. Robertson), Elijah B. Reed, James R. Childress, Thomas J. Reed, Joseph Reed, Henry Fullerton, John Fulcher, Benin J. Fitch, Robert Furguson, Stephen Frazier, John Needham, Jasper N. M. Thompson, Richard Teal, Levi Taylor, Paton Byrne, Samuel L. Allen, Stephen Eaton, William C. Sparks, John D. Smith, James A. Wilkinson, Sheagh Walker, Thomas A. Graves.

**VIESCA SENDS DELEGATES TO GENERAL CONVENTION.** Differences between the Provisional Governor and the Council, representing the various districts of Texas, reached an acute stage early in 1836. The commander-in-chief of the army was handicapped for want of adequate authority and the morale of all Texans ran low. Viesca, as did other municipalities, knew the time had arrived for decisive action. There was a popular demand for another General Convention and it was called to meet at Washington-on-the-Brazos, March 1, 1836.

Sterling C. Robertson, who at that time lived at Viesca and was captain of a ranger company, and George C. Childress, his nephew, were chosen to represent Viesca.

Meanwhile, Mexican armies with superior numbers and equipment, drove across Texas, unchecked. In February, a force of nine hundred Mexicans under Urrea wiped out a small band of Texans at San Patricio near Matamaros on the Rio Grande River and swept toward Goliad. Santa Anna arrived at San Antonio on February 23, 1836, with a force of about 3,000 Mexicans to lay siege to the city defended by less than 175 Texans under Colonel Travis.

**VIESCA DELEGATE WRITES DECLARATION OF TEXAS INDEPENDENCE.** In an atmosphere of tenseness and determination, the Convention assembled on March 1st.

Childress, James Gains, Bailey Hardeman, Edward Conrad and Collin McKinney were appointed on a committee to draft a declaration of independence. Next day, March 2, 1836, the committee presented the document and it was adopted, fifty-eight attaching their names to it, including Childress and Robertson.

For some time, there was a question as to who wrote the memorable document. It was established, however, it was written by George C. Childress, representative from Viesca and for whom a Texas county and town was named. (In 1936, a centennial year of the signing of the document, a statue of George Campbell Childress was unveiled at Washington on the Brazos by Miss Harriet Hall Dowe of Melrose, Mass., granddaughter of Childress.)



(Statue)  
GEORGE CAMPBELL CHILDRESS  
At  
Washington State Park

**TEXANS AWAKENED.** Even while the Convention was in session, Santa Anna was storming the last defense of San Antonio—the Alamo. Colonel Travis, in command, had appealed for assistance, and some of the delegates wanted to adjourn and go to his rescue. Calmer judgment prevailed, however, for Texans realized they needed to strengthen their government and military command. Before the Convention finished its labors, the Alamo had fallen and its defenders, to the last man, died fighting. Everywhere the Mexicans were meeting successes. At Coleto Creek, near Goliad, a few hundred Texans under Colonel James W. Fannin were surrounded and forced to surrender. On March 27th., they

were marched out of Goliad and slaughtered upon orders of Santa Anna. Texans were frantic in their efforts to ward off doom.

## 1424866

**THE RUNAWAY SCRAPE.** Most of the men had left their families to fight in the army. Santa Anna swept forward, unchecked, determined to wipe out the "traitors of Mexico." General Sam Houston retreated steadily—too readily, many thought. The famous "Runaway Scrape" became a rout—people leaving their homes without taking time to save anything, many on foot, others on horseback and some in ox-wagons. They had snatched a few of their earthly possessions and hurried—hurried—eastward to escape the wrath of a mad, revengeful despot!

The people at the Falls joined the general flight toward the Sabine river, although the withdrawal took place "with more order and deliberation" than that of people who fled directly before Santa Anna, Mrs. Lillian Schiller St. Romain wrote in her "A History of Lott and Its Vicinity" on authority of trustworthy sources. The withdrawal from the outpost at the Falls was indicative of the seriousness of the Indian threat, as well as fear of Mexican vengeance. C. M. Hubby of Waco, grandson of Thomas Chalmers of Viesca, said the abandonment of Viesca was occasioned by flight of a surveying party with Indians to the north of Viesca. The surveying party consisted of twenty men, only two of whom escaped to Viesca, where the news was received as a warning of great danger. The exact date of the flight from Viesca is not given, but news of the victories of Santa Anna and the Indian battle were given as causes.

**AT LAST, VICTORY!** Severely criticised, Sam Houston and his army continued to retreat while it was being recruited and trained with as much efficiency as possible under the circumstances. So rapid was Santa Anna's advance, his army even advanced ahead of the Texans. Santa Anna, confident "Napoleon of the West," spread his armies, aiming to sweep everything before him.



At Buffalo Bayou, near Houston and the San Jacinto River, on April 20, 1836, Houston and his army of nearly eight hundred men came in sight of about eleven hundred Mexicans camped at the confluence of the San Jacinto River and Buffalo Bayou. The Texans rested for the night and early next morning were informed that Santa Anna had received reinforcements of four hundred troops under General Cos.

Santa Anna, flushed with victory, and over-confident with superior numbers and the arrival of Cos, relaxed sensible precautions. On the afternoon of April 21st., 1836, while he, his officers and men were at siesta, determined and revengeful Texans charged into their midst, yelling, "Remember the Alamo: Remember Goliad!" What followed was not a battle, but a rout. Within a brief interval, the Mexicans were helpless, rushing madly about, confused, and seeking to save their lives.

Houston reported 630 Mexicans killed; 208 wounded and 730 captured, one of the captured being Santa Anna. He estimated the Mexicans were 1,600 strong at the beginning of the brief battle—rout.

**FALLS AREA PEOPLE IN THE BATTLE.** The outpost at the Falls of the Brazos furnished men in the decisive Battle of San Jacinto, but their names are not known. Perhaps, the number was limited, because defense of the frontier required their presence at the fort—to protect their people and those of other areas from both Mexicans and Indians.

Among those who took part in the battle were Alphonso F. Steele of the Sixth Company under command of Captain James Gillespie. Some of Mr. Steele's descendents live in the County, including a grandson, A. F. Steele of Marlin. Of the cavalry corps under command of Mirabeau B. Lamar was Daniel McKay, grandfather, and, commanding the Seventh Company of the Second Regiment of Texas Volunteers, was Captain Benjamin Bryant, great-grandfather, of Sparks McKay of Mexia, formerly of Falls County and its County State Highway Maintenance Engineer, and Mrs. Stella McKay (Sam) Mewhinney of Buckholts, Texas.

With the increase of population of Falls County since Texas Independence, it seems plausible that other descendants, or relatives, of the men who won Texas Independence, live, or have lived, in the county.

**STRANGER WOMAN EXPERIENCED RUNAWAY SCRAPE.** Near the turn of the century (1900) there lived on the north eastern edge of Blue Ridge (Stranger) a revered, elderly woman, known as "Grandma Moffit." She knew intimately such early Texans as General Sam Houston, Stephen F. Austin, John A. Wharton, Edward Burleson, John Austin, Sam Williams and John Henry Brown (soldier and author of Texas histories) and others. During the Runaway Scrape, she hitched her oxen to wagon, put in some supplies and a few household goods and, with her children, joined the grand stampede when the Mexicans had crossed the Colorado River. She related that "Times were exciting, because men were away, women and children were frightened and all kind of rumors were in everybody's mouth," according to a brief biography by the late A. W. Eddins, published in the *Marlin Democrat* in the middle 1890s.

Mrs. Moffit, her maiden name was Cynthia Hodge, was born in Kentucky in 1812 and, in 1825, moved with her father, Archie Hodge, and grandfather, Alexander Hodge, to San Felipe, Texas, capital of Stephen F. Austin's colony. Early the following year (1826) she moved to a place, now in Brazoria County, and at the age of "sweet 16," was married to Andrew Roberts.

In 1831, her husband, along with Captains John Henry Brown, John Austin, William J. Russell and others helped put an end to the despicable acts of the officious Colonel John Davis Bradburn, who heaped indignities upon the colonists, contrary to the Mexican Constitution of 1824. In resisting Bradburn the Texans resolved "that they were not rebelling against Mexico, but were simply cooperating with Santa Anna in the Liberal revolt which he was then leading against Bustemante."

Later, when Santa Anna reversed his "liberal" politics and invaded Texas to "subdue the traitors," Andrew

Roberts joined the army under Sam Houston and served as a scout.

Not long after the Battle of San Jacinto, Mrs. Roberts showed kindnesses to destitute Mexican soldiers, but frequently was forced to use firmness in ordering stragglers to "march on and leave her property alone."

After happiness with her husband, and hardships amid the vexations, Mr. Roberts died about 1847 and his widow and her large family struggled desperately until 1849, when she married J. P. Moffit, a veteran of the U. S.-Mexican war. In that same year, the family moved to Blue Ridge and lived a mile east of the present store at Stranger.

In the War Between the States, her husband and two sons enlisted in the Confederate army and went far away to battlefields. One son returned, but the other and her husband lost their lives and were buried on a hillside in Virginia.

Practically to the end of her long life, "Grandma Moffit" remained active, vigorous and possessing keen mental faculties. She provided for her family and that of her widowed son, until they were ready to assume their own responsibilities.

Relatives of "Grandma Moffit," who lived in Falls County and elsewhere today 1946, are members of the Hodge Family, including the Archie Hodge family, who lived for many years at Stranger.

**SIGNIFICANCE OF VICTORY FOR TEXAS.** The victory of the Texans at San Jacinto was complete and of far reaching significance. It is classed as one of the decisive battles of world history. A small army of Texans had not only defeated and captured most of the opposing army, but the general and president of an enemy country, Mexico—the "Napoleon of the West" (Santa Anna).

Santa Anna aided Sam Houston and Texans affect Texas Independence. Texas was a free and independent nation. Later, it was annexed to the United States, but treacherous, fickle Mexican would-be despots, including



Santa Anna, repudiated the legal treaty of Velasco and brought on a war between the United States and Mexico, the result of which was, not only settling for all time the Texas victory, but extending the boundaries of the United States from the Atlantic Ocean to the Pacific Ocean.

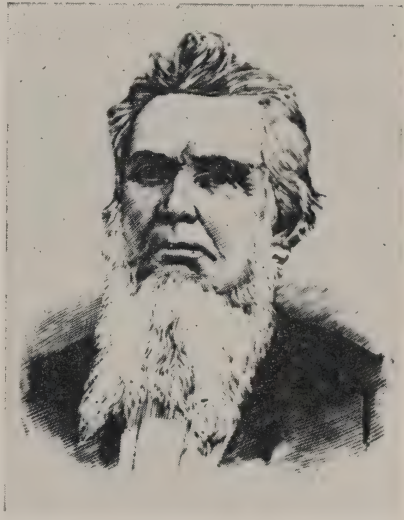
**TEXANS RETURN TO THEIR HOMES.** After San Jacinto, most of the Texans, (in the army and the Runaway Scrape) returned to their deserted and ramshacked homes, filled with joy and hope. With pioneer determination, they set about rebuilding them. But their trials were far from over. The Indians were still troublesome and die-hard Mexicans were among them with schemes of revenge—schemes of fomenting hatreds and wars of extermination of the “pale faces.”



## CHAPTER III

### Morrell's Account of Life at the Falls

**AT THE FALLS OF RIVER 1835-1837.** Conditions at the falls (1835-1837), which represented the seat of civilization within a radius of many miles, were described by the Reverend Z. N. Morrell, a thirty-four-year old preacher, who left Tennessee "to die of tuberculosis," the doctors said; but who did not die, but lived to the age of eighty-three. He wrought indelibly in Texas history and religion and was accredited with being one of the founders of the Baptist denomination of churches in Texas. To the "falls of the Brazos," he brought the first sermon, as far as religious history shows. Morrell's son, Allen Morrell, fought in Texas wars of independence and at the Battle of Salado (1842) where he was captured by the Mexicans, serving in prison. Afterwards, he settled in Falls County in a log house on the present home-place of Mr. and Mrs. Grady Hair at Stranger (1946). (This former Allen Morrell home, in which the Reverend Z. N. Morrell lodged when he preached in Falls County in early days, was moved and rebuilt in 1936 on the Old Settlers and Veterans Association reunion grounds at Tomlinson Hill.) Allen Morrell, also, in 1850, was employed by the first Commissioners Court to survey, lay-off and sell residence lots and streets in the county seat—all of which he did, as recorded elsewhere in this volume.



**THE REVEREND Z. N. MORRELL**  
(Picture from "A History of Texas Baptists" by J. M. Carroll and courtesy of Baptist Standard.)



The Reverend Z. N. Morrell suffered from hemorrhage of the lungs and Tennessee physicians said he was in the dangerous stage of tuberculosis. They advised a change of climate, more conducive to recovery, although he was expected to die. The preacher was already interested in Texas, where his friend, Sam Houston, hoped to set up "a little one-horse republic" and, saying he'd just as soon die in Texas as anywhere, headed this way on a prospecting trip. After leaving Tennessee, he tarried in Mississippi, hoping his health would improve and, also, to preach, until late in 1835. In December of that year, he headed for Texas, carrying in his heart a burning desire to administer to those who needed him and to prospect for a healthier place, one to which to move his family. Several reasons led him to the falls of the Brazos. First, the falls was a famous point of designation, a place of meeting for prospectors, adventurers and colonists throughout Texas and many States of the United States. Also, his book, "Flowers and Fruits," reveals, he was "pressed hard by a former engagement" in which "by agreement we were to meet ex-Congressman David Crockett, from Gibson County, Tennessee, on Christmas Day at the 'Falls of the Brazos,' and have a bear hunt."

Modestly, the writer told of his perilous journey westward, his hardships and trials with the Indians, and although "pressed hard by a former engagement," he took time to preach and administer spiritual needs to sorrowing colonists, suffering from the terrors of savage Indians. This pioneer preacher, who contributed so much to Texas, religiously and otherwise,—and who didn't die, as doctors predicted—arrived on the evening of December 30, 1835, at the cabin of Captain Goldsby Childress. J. M. Carroll's "A History of Texas Baptists" records. He found encamped there about forty others, prospecting for lands, and decided a sermon should be given before supper. This was the first of many sermons he was destined to deliver in various sections of Texas at a time when Texas was almost void of religion.

**NEAR THE FALLS.** On the night before arrival at the falls, he wrote, he stopped at the home of Jesse Webb and was "kindly received by a brother whose eyes, about ten years later, it was the writer's duty to close when death had done its work."

"While staking our horses," he continued, "he (Webb) pointed to a post where a horse was standing tied a few nights before, when an Indian came, cut the rope and carried the animal away. We had given our horses no corn since crossing the Trinity. Some of their legs were sore from 'walking ropes'; we had traveled since morning fifty miles; must go on the morrow through country infested with Indians ---."

Next morning, his book relates, he continued his tedious and dangerous journey toward the falls, keeping "a sharp lookout all day for Indians. Game was seen in every direction, in great numbers. We saw land during the day that had been cultivated, without fence and we supposed, from appearances, that it had grown fifty bushels (corn) to the acre. ---- At night, we were at the 'Falls of the Brazos.'

**FOUND ONE FAMILY AT THE FALLS.** "Here we found but one family. There was, close by, the camp of about forty Tennesseans. They were all out on Little River hunting lands. Upon inquiry, we found that David Crockett had not arrived and consequently the bear-hunt with him was a disappointment. After a little rest, we began a thorough investigation of the country for ourselves. Our expectation as to the great value of the lands was fully realized. The country was all we could desire—lands very rich, range extraordinarily good, wood and water aplenty and the prospect for health very flattering. The river at this time was very low at this point—not over knee-deep to our horses—the falls about ten perpendicular feet and the water below them abounding with fish. (The reader will bear in mind that the Falls in Morrell's time was about two miles southwest of where it is now. The river changed its course about 1865.) We examined the place minutely with reference to its capa-

city to run machinery. A few old Texans yet alive remembered the stream was quite narrow at this point. (His book was written in 1872.)

"After a satisfactory examination was made of the surrounding country, we left for the three forks of Little River, about thirty-five miles southwest -----."

Apparently, the trip referred to was a prospecting trip. The writer described the road-less, trail-less wilderness and "great uneasiness felt relative to Indians depredations."

**WILD GAME PLENTIFUL.** While descriptions on this trip were not of scenes in the Falls County area, they were nearby and, reason tells, they would have applied to Falls County, if the writer had happened to travel in the Falls County area. For this reason, herewith are excerpts from his book (*Flowers and Fruits*): "Mustang, or wild Mexican horses, had trails going in every direction. Our path was distinguished from theirs by the prints of horse-shoes. Occasionally a buffalo trail crossed ours, but the differences were easily detected. Yonder in the distance was seen a large herd of mustangs and on every hand great numbers of deer. We had become so much accustomed to the latter that by this time they attracted little attention. All were watching for an Indian and a buffalo.

**CHASES BUFFALO ON MULE.** "Riding the hill across Elm Creek, the leader of our party cried out, 'What is that hump on its back?' The animal startled by the sight of men and the sound of human voices, gave the noise peculiar to the buffalo tribe and off went a large herd, making the earth almost tremble beneath the terrible stampede. Here was an open field, no timber, a chance for a fair race; not one of us had ever seen a buffalo in his life and it was really amusing to see old men, farmers and deacons in the Baptist church, with the representatives of three honorable professions, all forgetting that they were seven to eight hundred miles from home, with horses jaded, and some of them not well since their performance with the ropes, running these



animals at the top of their speed and shouting with all their might. Here we went, helter-skelter. Hurrah, boys! bang, bang, bang went guns and pistols and away went the herd, following close upon the heels of the leader. They ran scientifically, with the right foot before, a side at a time, for three or four hundred yards. Then the leader would change and run with the left foot before, every buffalo following him, making the change.

MORRELL ON A MULE. "The writer, poor fellow, rode a mule and it would show its blood. It would run with all its might toward the herd, but when it would get within forty yards, and sniff the peculiar odor that escapes the buffalo in the chase, it would invariably shy round. Whenever I would get near enough and ready to shoot, I would find my mule at right angles with my game and bounding rapidly away. I thought to myself, 'No meat for me, unless this part of the performance can be changed.' The herd was soon gone, with no damage done that we could discover and it was with difficulty that we found our way back to the trail. The supposition was that we had gone about two miles in the race. -----

"My health by this time was almost entirely restored and my voice was clear and full. --- Here we spent a few days (on Little River) and went over --- on the Colorado.

"After an absence of about twelve days Deacon Hunt and I were back at the falls; the other four having remained with the land-hunters. Our mission was accomplished and we were seriously considering the propriety of moving --- to settle in the wilderness. The climate certainly would be suitable for one in my condition and as I could neither preach in Tennessee or Mississippi without endangering my life, I felt a strong inclination to make the change. After much prayer and meditation my mind was made up and I thank God for the decision."

BRINGS FAMILY TO THE FALLS. The book records that early in January, 1836, Mr. Morrell and "Deacon Hunt were 'homeward bound'." It relates that he preached along the way at every opportunity, "took a

Red River steamer at Nacogdoches for Nachez and, reshipping there, landed at Memphis." He "found my loved ones all well and willing to share with me the fortunes of Texas, be they for good or bad."

Soon, he and his family were headed for Texas and the 'Falls of the Brazos.' In J. M. Carroll's "A History of Texas Baptists" is the following: "There was a man sent from God whose name was Morrell. In April, 1836, just a few days preceding the battle of San Jacinto, he was slowly approaching the Sabine River from the East, walking and driving an ox team hitched to a wagon, on which were his wife and four children and all his earthly possessions. This man was about thirty-five years of age. He was long, lean, pale and cadaverous. He seemed in a rather advanced stage of the disease known as tuberculosis, but still was a man full of energy and purpose and optimism and unyielding pluck and perserverance. Frequently meeting and passing this man, hurriedly going East from West, were scores of people, mostly women and children, in all sorts of vehicles, on horseback and on foot. They were frightened settlers from Texas and, though already across the Sabine River, they were yet in mad panic and crying: 'The Alamo and Goliad are fallen! Our brave men are butchered to the last man and the Mexican armies are yet coming! They are yet coming!'

"The driver of the ox team stopped, listened, heard, but cracked his long whip over his tired oxen, which had already traveled more than two-hundred-fifty miles, and drove persistently on, unshaken in his plans and purposes and undaunted by the distressing reports. He was many times cursed as a fool, but his eyes and his heart were steadfastly toward Texas. He crossed the Sabine River. He made his slow and toilsome way more than another two-hundred-fifty miles, through the wilderness, across creeks and into the very heart of the new Texas land, and for nearly a half century lived and prayed and worked for the upbuilding of the country, for the salvation of the people and for the establishment of his Lord and Master. He lived a valuable and exceedingly useful life -----."

A full biography of Z. N. Morrell is found in the history of Texas and the religion of Texas. Because his service to this area (Falls County), long an outpost of civilization, came at a critical time, a recount of some of it is given herein. His book, "Flowers and Fruits," is one of the few written records of early conditions in this area.

#### HEARS OF HOUSTON'S VICTORY AT SAN JACINTO.

The preacher had come to Texas, found it appealing and a vast field for his work and had gone back East for "his loved ones, who were willing to share with me the fortunes of Texas, be they good or bad." Now he was headed back. He wrote, "Seldom in my life had I turned back and, trusting in God, we traveled on. ---- Reliable information soon met us to the effect that General Houston, with his forces, consisting of seven hundred and eighty-three men, had engaged the Mexicans, nearly two thousand strong, routed the army and captured Santa Anna ----. Santa Anna, by permission of General Houston, sent a courier to his general next in rank to himself, ordering him and all Mexican forces out of Texas. The cowardly Mexican tyrant now sat crouching at the feet of the 'Hero of San Jacinto,' no doubt dwelling upon the fate of the Alamo and the murder of one hundred and eighty-eight brave men by his own order on Sunday, the Sixth of March; and well remembering the orders he had given his generals in command of the different divisions of his army to shoot all the prisoners that fell into their hands, which had resulted in the coldest-blooded murder of the brave Fannin and three hundred and thirty men at Goliad on Sunday March 27th., who were promised, if they would surrender, to be treated kindly as prisoners of war and to be sent in vessels at once to the United States. Trembling for his own safety and for the prisoners of war taken at the same battle, he was willing, at least for the time being, for peace.

"The families were now all invited back (to their homes) ----,



**LONESOME AND DREARY AT THE FALLS.** The writer related more excruciating experiences with the Indians, his services to bereaved and saddened people and told of his services for the cause of religion. He wrote that from the Cherokee Indians he purchased some cattle and moved on as rapidly as possible to the Brazos. "On arrival everything looked lonesome and dreary. With depredations constantly going on in the west by the Mexicans and on the north by the Indians, it required fortitude to stem the current. --- The people made some corn, notwithstanding the runaway scrape. We had to move cautiously. We heard of continued threats of Mexican invasions. The Texas army remained in the field; but there was very soon not a dollar in the military chest. The year, 1836, although flushed with victory at San Jacinto, was a year of great trial for Texas people. Numbers of our men were absent from their families nearly the entire year, either in the Texas army, or west of the Trinity making a crop, while their families remained in the east. Indian depredations were now beginning in good earnest. Truly in every way, it was a year of trial that few living survivors have not forgotten ---- .

**INDIAN THREAT AVERTED.** "While traveling with my family in November, 1836, from the neighborhood of Wheelock to the Falls, a young man by the name of Reed being our only company, we camped near a house a little off from the main road. Guns were put in order and two little sons, aged thirteen and eleven years and young Reed, were ordered to lie down with the shot-bags around their necks and their gun-locks under their blankets to keep the powder dry. At that day we used flint and steel lock exclusively. About eleven o'clock at night the Indians, about one hundred and fifty in number, approached our camp. Our faithful dogs raised the alarm and on rising to our feet we discovered that the Indians were in close contact with the dogs. Every man and boys were ordered up and with guns in hand, two men and two boys stood on the opposite side of the fire from the Indians. Campers will all see at once the advantage gained by this tactics. The Indians were

frightened when they saw the guns and, through the fire, we could see them sulking away into the ravine close by. Of course, there was no more sleeping done that night in our camp. Morning came and the God of Jacob was praised for our deliverance.

**SOLDIERS JOIN MORRELL'S SMALL GROUP.** "About eleven o'clock we were overtaken by a company of fifteen soldiers, most of them on foot and on their way to the fort at the falls. We gave them at noon all the provisions we had for they were quite hungry. My little children were greatly distressed as they saw these hungry soldiers devouring the last of our provisions. My feelings I will not attempt to describe. It was my duty and, trusting in God and in these soldiers, we traveled on in the evening as cheerfully as we could. They agreed to camp with us at night. The Indians we then knew were below and between us and the settlements.

"Near the little Brazos our teams were all hobbled and staked, a fire built and soon the soldiers were scattered through the adjoining woods in search of game. Their commissary stores, and ours too, were exhausted. One gun after another fired; the axe and water bucket had disappeared from our camp; the noise of the axe was soon heard; a tree fell; and several turkeys were brought in and a bucket of honey. All were too hungry to pick the turkeys; they were skinned, divided in two pieces and hung on sticks before the fire. This was our first meat as a family without bread. Will it be the last?

**SOLDIERS WERE WORTHY MEN.** "These soldiers, with whom we had divided bread in the journey and who, after eating bountifully of the turkey and honey, sat cheerfully around the camp fire, treated us with marked courtesy and kindness. A majority of them well knew how to do it, because of their training in youth. Most of these were young men who had come to Texas as fore-runners of intelligent families, to spy out the country, and on their arrival entered into active sympathy with the cause of Texas and greatly admired Sam Houston.

Here they were making long marches and counter-marches and getting their living principally out of the woods."

**READS EARLY NEWSPAPER.** The writer recorded reading numbers of the "Telegram," the first "permanent newspaper ever published in Texas, issued from San Felipe in October, 1835," which during the Mexican invasion was forced to move deeper into East Texas (to Harrisburg), after which it was captured by Santa Anna's forces, then reappeared in August, 1836, at Columbia. "This paper was of great value to the government and was one great instrument that led teeming thousands of emigrants to seek homes in Texas. --- From it, we saw that Sam Houston was inaugurated president of the Republic on the Twenty-second of October, 1836. Here we have his address, with these closing words: 'It now becomes my duty to make presentation of this sword, the emblem of my past office. I have worn it with some humble pretensions in defense of my country; and should the danger of my country again call my service, I expect to resume it and respond to that call, if needful, with my blood and life.' Fired by such sentiments as these and from such a source, our company of soldiers seemed perfectly willing to fight and bear their own expenses."

The writer (Morrell) took issue with an estimate of the population of Texas made in September, 1835. (He did not relate the sources of the estimate, merely writing "an estimate lies before me ---.") The estimate gave the population of Texas as follows:

|                 |        |
|-----------------|--------|
| Anglo-Americans | 30,000 |
| Mexicans        | 3,470  |
| Indians         | 14,200 |

"I must here be permitted to enter my protest against the correctness of this statement ----. There was at this time, as is usual in almost all new countries, a disposition to exaggeration. It was impossible to make the census of this country and I doubt exceedingly if the authorities would have been willing for the census at



that time to have gone forth to the world under oath. During 1837 and 1838, I traveled, as will be seen, over almost all the territory of Texas then inhabited by the Americans and I have no idea there was over fifteen thousand white people in the country. The number of Indians must have been greatly underrated in this statement."

**MORRELLS REACH THE FALLS.** "Reaching the colony at the Falls, we found great excitement. There were six or eight families in the colony; at the fort near by the camp were some thirty or forty soldiers. So soon as things were somewhat composed, we had an appointment for preaching. This was continued once a week, when I was at home and circumstances would allow.

**REPORT OF INDIANS.** "We were frequently interfered with by reports that Indians were in the neighborhood. Rangers, who were kept as spies, would very frequently come in and report smokes on the west side of the river answered by smokes on the east. Indians had set times on the frontiers to move south and do mischief; this was generally on or about full moon. Travelling, as they usually did, in separate, small detachments with points designated at which to meet, they would frequently kindle fires and throw piles of green moss from the trees on them and in this way in an open country like Texas, they could easily communicate with each other. Generally, the rangers would detect their advance and we were notified — but not always."

For some time, after the preacher and his family arrived at the falls, he preached and farmed, as other families farmed, under the protection of soldiers, always on guard. Rangers at the fort, when necessary, went out on raids to "beat the Indians to the draw" and break up their nefarious schemes.

**CALLED UPON TO GO FOR SUPPLIES.** On January 1, 1837, the commander of the fort (Fort Milam, or Viesca) told Mr. Morrell ammunition was about exhausted, and money too, and knowing that the preacher

had some from the sale of his property in Tennessee, asked him to go to the town of Washington-on-the-Brazos, one-hundred-twenty miles to the south "in search of powder and lead," at his own expense.

"At this point the devil sorely tried me," Morrell wrote. "The question was asked, 'Now sir, do you believe the language of the Bible, from which you preached so earnestly to the people in the old town of Nacogdoches just a year ago?' After a little meditation and prayer the language of my soul was sounded out audibly from my lips: 'Yes, I believe yet the wilderness of Texas will blossom as the rose and the solitary places be made glad with the presence of the Lord'; and I started."

He arrived at Washington, having preached along the route, and secured some lead, but no powder. He took as much as was safe to load upon his horse and searched elsewhere for powder, selecting "to return by Independence," of which he wrote, "It looked more like dependence, than independence."

He arrived at "Jackson's Store," eight miles from Nashville, "weary, hungry and impatient" and found that some powder had just arrived, but the room was crowded with men trying to get it. The preacher pushed forward and "after some threats made on both sides of the question — a description given of the condition at the Falls — my long trip — shivering then in my cold, wet clothing — six canisters of powder were received and paid for and I was home (at the Falls) on the fourth night. I rode the same horse two-hundred-forty miles inside of four days. The soldiers, on receiving the powder and lead, were in fine spirits. There was no danger of starvation, with plenty of ammunition, and hopes were entertained that the Indians could now be held in check. --- It was thirty miles to the nearest settlement on Little River. A few families were at Parker's Fort, thirty-five miles distant, near the present locality of Springfield ----."

**INDIAN TROUBLES INCREASE.** Near the close of 1836 and into 1837, Indian troubles increased everywhere in Texas and the people at the Falls were plagued with

increased misgivings and anxieties. Soldiers were out each day in search of tell-tale Indian signs and on guard throughout the nights. Already, they had learned it was wiser to keep track of the wily savages and, if they must, battle them as far away from the fort as possible — away from the women and children.

**ELM CREEK FIGHT.** In January, 1837, spies from the Falls and at Little River, who met each day on middle-ground, reported fresh Indian trails, which forebode trouble. About fifteen men under Lieutenant George B. Erath, some from the Falls and some from Little River, followed the trails which came together almost at the mouth of Elm Creek (Bell County). This indicated there were not a few Indians on the rampage, but many. Erath and his men determined to attack — to surprise them. Strange to say, they succeeded, even though the Indians had watch-dogs. Momentarily, the Indians were stampeded, but rallied when they realized there were only a few soldiers. Lieutenant Erath ordered a retreat, keeping himself in the rear, as did all brave leaders of that time. The Indians pressed closely. Erath, bringing up the rear, was on one side of a ravine and a large Indian was on the other, both guns were empty. Erath and the Indian loaded quickly, eyeing each other. Erath took no time to measure his powder — just poured in a handful. Both raised to shoot and both guns went off together. Erath and the Indian fell. Soldiers hurried to Erath, shook him and asked if he were hurt. A German by birth, Erath replied, in brogue, "No, I ish not hurt; my gun, she knocks down from both ends." He had poured in too much powder, but had killed the Indian.

Thirteen rangers escaped this uneven battle. Two men lost their lives, one unknown (although John Henry Brown recorded the name of David Clark) and the other, Frank Childress, son of Mr. and Mrs. Goldsby Childress, related to George C. Childress, who wrote the Texas Declaration of Independence. Mr. Morrell wrote, "Childress was not killed dead on the field, but was afterwards found with his gun sitting by a tree a little



way off, and his body resting lifeless against the same tree. The other man was scalped and his hands were chopped off."

**MORRELL FELT PAID FOR LONG TRIP.** The Indians buried their dead in a pond of water and fled. They were pursued but not overtaken, according to men who returned from the search. The engagement was not in vain, however, for, if it had not been for it, the Indians would have raided, burned and scalped people in the area. Their numbers were evidence of their desperate designs at that time, and afterwards. Mr. Morrell wrote, "Now, I felt a thousand times paid for my long ride to Washington amid so much exposure and anxiety. --- I lamented, in the end, the loss of the noble son of my dear Sister Childress."

**SOLDIERS STAND GUARD, WHILE OTHERS FARM.** Mr. Morrell wrote he was thankful for the goodwill of the soldiers and rangers. Facilities for farming were poor. The people lived within comparative safety of the fort (Fort Milam, or Viesca) on the west bank of the river and Morrell's land was on the east side. During most of the farming season, horses and oxen had to swim the river twice a day—over to work and back for safety at night. The farmers crossed in canoes. Rangers and soldiers stood guard, while planting and harvesting was in progress. Farming was primitive, but the land was fertile and fifty bushels of corn were made to the acre. Game was plentiful. Corn, for bread, was the chief crop. Salt was scarce and hardships often were endured for lack of it.

The "outpost at the Falls" felt all the "pinches" of its location. There was little, if any, money in the hands of either soldiers, or the few families there.

**MORRELL CALLED UPON AGAIN.** The captain, commanding the post, again, informed Mr. Morrell in early summer (1837) that ammunition was almost out and stores of every kind were very short. The officer knew that the preacher still had some money from the sale

of his property in Tennessee and informed him, secretly, of the true situation, saying that "secrecy is safety" and appealing for aid.

Realizing all persons in the fort had "all things in common" and had either to join hand, farm, fight and live together, or fall back, leaving the lower settlements at the mercy of the savages, or die, Morrell started on another trip for supplies in March, 1837. He left with an ox-team, willing to match wits again with savages, risk his life — fearing that his little log cabin would be burned to ashes and his family wiped out. Eight oxen were yoked and bound to a wagon strong enough to carry five thousand pounds. He carried two extra horses along with him. His son, twelve years of age, was the driver.

He crossed the Navasota River twice and, when nearing Houston, met a man who had been there and told him there was no lead in Houston; however, Sam Houston, on his retreat the year before to San Jacinto, had left a pig of lead, weighing seventy pounds, under his house and Morrell could get it upon his return. After swimming his ox-team across Buffalo Bayou, as he had other streams, he found Houston "a city of tents" with only "one of two log cabins." Morrell wrote there was "plenty of John Barley Corn and cigars" and other worldly attractions, so, "after changing the garb of the wagoner for one similar to that worn in the city, I went out in search of a place to preach." He found it — and preached!

He purchased two kegs of powder, family supplies and additional articles for the soldiers and started homeward, heavily loaded. Along the road back, he found a pig of lead and continued the tedious haul. He wrote of more dangers and depressive conditions along the route. One of his horses had been stolen on the route to Houston and, on the way back, he found it in the vicinity of the present city of Bryan, for which he paid a reward of twenty-five dollars.

**RECEIVED REJOICINGLY AT THE FALLS.** "When we reached the eastern bank of the Brazos, opposite our log cabin and the soldiers on the west," he wrote, "and

announced across the river that we had powder, lead and commissary stores, hats were waved and as loud a shout was raised as would have been during the late war on the arrival of a seventy-five gun ship in some great emergency."

**JOYS AND SORROWS MIXED.** While there was momentary rejoicing, when ammunition and supplies were brought to the Falls, the life that followed was a mixture of joys and sorrows. The men and women were frequently elated over news from other parts of the Republic, "catching eagerly at very little ray of light that made their prospects even tolerable." Often, however, gloom hung over the camp. From north, east and west, "rumors of Indian outrages made the blood of the settlers chill, sometimes, with fear and then boil with feelings and determination for furious revenge."

Preacher and people carried carnal weapons with them to the house of God and did not for a moment suppose they were violating the Scriptures. They instantly changed the services into war—as a matter of self-preservation. Often men left the service, rode off with guns in hand on Sundays, mornings and evenings, in pursuit of Indians, who often were not overtaken. They escaped to the west, usually in the vicinity of Little River.

As a minister, Mr. Morrell constantly lent spiritual comfort and material assistance to those who had lost loved ones in raids. In the midst of the many trials and tribulations, the preacher recorded, "The tempter came and his speech was as follows: 'Where is your faith now? You had better concede to the propositions of your liberal brethren in Tennessee and Mississippi, even if you die, than undergo such hardships by day and night. The Indians will certainly get you yet ----.' But this plausible story I felt for the time being influenced and there was a little wavering. God, I thought, certainly had made it plainly my duty to live and labor in Texas and, with prayer for divine aid, my mind dwelt upon the deliverances of God and was greatly strengthened. God sent an angel to provide food for Elijah under the



juniper-tree, when he despaired and was willing to die and sent fire to consume the offering in the presence of the prophets of Baal. He also put in the heart of Rahab the harlot to conceal the spies while examining the city of Jericho and its fortifications and finally caused its walls to tumble down at the sound of the ram's horns, leading Israel safely into the promised land of Canaan. Amidst these meditations I could but say, 'My heart is fixed.' God gave me an inward token that I should be concealed from the Indian's watchful eye and that He would recognize my offerings in years to come. The wilderness would yet blossom like the rose. ---- "

**AGAIN, A CALL UPON MORRELL.** The fort at the Falls, again, was in distress in May, 1837. Mr. Morrell was called upon to make another trip for ammunition and supplies. Again, he journeyed southward—to Houston—in his oxen-drawn wagon, having only currency of paper from the banks of the United States. This money was considered worthless in Houston and, by June 1, 1837, he was in New Orleans, hoping to exchange it for more negotiable money. For fourteen days he walked the streets, trying to negotiate for supplies. Finally, he succeeded in exchanging his money (his own, of course) "at about sixty cents on the dollar" and bought the needed supplies.

**"FORT AT THE FALLS WIPED OUT."** Mr. Morrell returned to Houston with goods he had acquired and, upon arrival, found letters telling him that Indians and Mexicans, about the middle of June, had overpowered the fort at the Falls, had killed a ranger, Coryell (for whom Coryell County was named), and all the families had been forced to flee for their lives. The preacher's family was safely at Nashville (he learned later), forty-five miles down the river but "nearly everything in the way of provisions and household furniture had fallen into the enemy's hands. "Truly, it seemed that all my misfortunes were coming upon me at once," he wrote. "God be praised, my wife and children lived ---. The best crop I ever made was all lost, our household furni-

ture and farming tools all captured and about a thousand dollars lost in the failure of banks."

These misfortunes, together with prospects at the Falls, always an outpost even up to the 1850s, seemed to have been all that Mr. Morrell could endure at the Falls. His book records, "My goods (those purchased in New Orleans and Houston) were stored in Houston, except two wagon-loads that were carried to Washington as soon as possible, and we were soon in business, trying to recuperate after so much loss."

**MORRELL'S WORK CONTINUES UNTIL THE 1890s.** At Washington - on - the - Brazos, Morrell not only was a merchant, trader and farmer, but his book told of his blacksmith shop. Like other pioneer preachers, he made a living for himself and his family at hard work and preached, because preaching was in his soul. Possessing a missionary spirit, he visualized religion is worth contributing to and expanding and, with others, laid the foundation for missionary evangelism in Texas.

His contributions to Falls County in the early, stormy days, when it was a wilderness, definitely distinguishes him as one of its founders, as well as being an outstanding patriot in Texas Independence and freedom from uncivilized Indians. In religious history, he is accredited with being one of the founders of the Baptist denomination and its organizations in Texas; also, as contributing greatly to the establishment of Baylor University.

Among the many churches he helped to establish in Texas is that of the First Baptist Church of Marlin. Soon after Falls County was created, the Commissioners Court, August 18, 1851, donated lots for churches in the new county seat. The minutes show that "there shall be one lot donated for a Baptist church and Z. N. Morrell is requested to chose, or select, said lot out of any lots that have not been disposed of." Mr. Morrell selected one a short distance north, on the east line, of the court house square, on Ward street at its intersection with Church street (southeast corner).

From the "History of the Waco Baptist Association" records, the late C. T. Curry, long-time clerk of the First Baptist Church of Marlin, compiled a history of the church, which shows it was organized April 10, 1852, by Elder Z. N. Morrell.

While the records may not show that Mr. Morrell organized the Blue Ridge Baptist Church (organized in 1859), they show that he preached in that church many times as a missionary.

J. M. Carroll in "A History of Texas Baptists" wrote, "Z. N. Morrell was in very many respects a wonderful man. He was not what the world calls educated, but he was remarkably intelligent and a vigorous and deep thinker --- he was a popular and successful preacher --- a man whose works were constant exemplifications of his faith."

Though stricken with tuberculosis when about thirty-three, and doctors had said he couldn't live long, he preached all over Texas, lived to be eighty-three and was buried in February, 1884, at Kyle, Texas. He lived at Brenham at the time his book was written.





## CHAPTER IV

### Indian Cruelties ~ Passing of the Indians

**EARLY AFTER INDEPENDENCE.** After victory at San Jacinto, the people of Texas were in high hopes, but their troubles were far from over. Especially was this true for those who lived in the Falls area, still an isolated outpost — an outer “feeler and check” for savage Indians, who were determined to wipe out the “pale faces” and preserve their favorite haunts. The settlers experienced ravages of the blood-thirsty Comanches, the wild and roving Apaches, the Cherokees and, less than thirty miles away, to the north, the Wacos and Tehuacanas. Of course, not all Indians were dangerous, although all required continual watching. George B. Erath wrote, “The Indians who permanently occupied the Brazos Region were the Caddos, Ionas, and Anardarcos tribes, exiled from Louisiana when Texas belonged to Mexico; they were half-civilized; were armed and in war. were good friends to the whites; and when peace came, they were still truer friends. They and the Cherokees, together with the northern Indians around the trading post gave much protection to the whites by preventing the depredations of small savage tribes. These inferior tribes, like the Wacos, had descended from the Wichita country, assumed the names of their chiefs, wore no clothing and were savage, entirely. They were looked upon as very unwelcome visitors by the whites. ---- ” Erath described the ambitions and depredations of the blood-thirsty Comanches and other Indians of savage instincts. Even, with the aid of the few loyal Indians, people at the Falls were on guard day and night and in continual jeopardy and anxiety.

It is estimated that the Anglo-American population in Texas in 1836 was not more than 30,000 — and most of it was in the south and east, miles from the Falls area. The Indians were un-numbered — and what’s more,

revengeful Mexicans, humiliated in defeat, were among them, fanning hatreds and wars of extermination against white people.

The people had little money and the war had cost heavily. Texas paper money was of unstable value. The Rev. Z. N. Morrell wrote, "The year of 1836 was a year of great trial for the Texas people." Typical of frontiersmen, however, they faced their problems with determination and confidence. People of the Falls area fought doggedly to retain their homes, to save their families and build a livable place, despite Indians and other handicaps.

President Houston pursued a policy of promoting treaties for the mutual benefit of the settlers and the Indians. During his tenure, the Indian stole, roamed and committed minor atrocities, but there were no general wars of disasters. However, the famous Elm Creek fight took place during his term in January, 1837. The fight was referred to in a summary of experiences of the Reverend Mr. Morrell at the falls but another brief review summarized from an account by George B. Erath, is necessary to emphasize woes at the Falls in 1837.

**ELM CREEK FIGHT.** Major George B. Erath was in command of fourteen men who fought the uneven battle with the Indians on Elm Creek in Milam County, not far from the present Falls-Milam County line, not far from the present town of Rosebud. Sergeant McLouchlan came to the fort on January 4, 1837, and reported he had found tracks of a dozen Indians, apparently up to mischief. That night it rained, but not to be discouraged, eighteen men left the fort to deal with the savages. A little later four men turned back, leaving only fourteen among whom were the Childress boys, sons of Mr. and Mrs. Goldsby Childress.

After several miles of travel, they came upon the Indians at Elm Creek—not a dozen, but a hundred or more! A quick consultation brought agreement that an attack might be successful, if the Indians were of the uneducated sort, but tough, if the Indians had had experience fighting rangers. A fight began suddenly and



Erath and his men were forced to retreat. They managed to escape the murderous charges, although they killed many yelling savages, losing two of their own men — a man named Clark and Frank Childress.

During the lull, Erath called upon his men to return and bury their dead comrades, but the men remonstrated, saying "only for impeachment of cowardice and insubordination" would they return to such uneven circumstances. Erath said he could not censure them for such views and permitted the retreat to continue. The men eventually reaching the fort. Later, some of them returned to the scene of the battle, found Clark's body brutally mutilated, his hands chopped off and scalped. Frank Childress was seated, leaning against a tree, his gun nearby, on a spot which was in the very thick of the short-lived battle. Apparently, Childress mortally wounded, had managed to sit down by the tree, where he died, overlooked by the scalping savages.

**JAMES CORYELL KILLED.** In June, of that year (1837) several members of Fort Milam (Viesca) — Ezra Webb, Michaelman, James Coryell, a Mr. Berry, Samuel Burton and one other whose name is not known — were surprised and attacked by a group of savages during the rangers' "quiet and enjoyable raid on a bee-tree," Mrs. Lillian Schiller, St. Romain quoted on authority in her "A History of Lott and its Vicinity." "Coryell was killed but the others escaped. There has been much discussion among interested persons about the location of Coryell's grave and many have searched for it near the site of old Fort Milam at the Falls, but the exact place has never been proved."

**PEOPLE RETURN TO FALLS COUNTY AREA.** During the war of Independence, most of the men left the Falls area for service in the army and, during the Runaway Scrape, almost everyone else left. After victory, they returned slowly — realizing the difficulties at the isolated place, where Indians were numerous. (Some of the woes at the Falls were recorded by the Reverend Mr. Morrell, and summarized in Chapter III of this

volume. Mr. Morrell wrote, "the fort at the Falls (1837) was overpowered -- and all the families had been forced to flee for their lives --- ." Even, his family had fled to Washington-on-the-Brazos and the preacher, himself, deemed it safer there, as he continued his work for Texas. He left the Falls immediately after the Elm Creek fight and the death of Coryell. The brave patriot who had every reason to be discouraged over the fate of civilization at the Falls, misjudged the determination and fortitude of the people. Some withstood the storms, others returned and still others came later.)

**FORT MARLIN.** Among the first to return were families of the Morgans and Marlins. They came to the east side of the river and John Marlin built a block-house about four miles east of the Falls and two or three miles south of the present town of Marlin. The large house became "Fort Marlin." Description of it is not recorded -- except in memories of children of the pioneers who described it to them. Many recollect their forebearers describing the fort as a rectangular house, larger than average, built of big oak logs, mortised at the corners and laid close together, with holes at advantageous points from which to watch and shoot. It sat on a low hill, from which a view of the ravine and flat areas a roundabout could be watched. In 1946, only a few old bricks and debris and a Centennial Marker identify the spot. The Memorial was placed there in 1936 (Centennial Year of Texas Independence) by the Centennial Commission of the State of Texas and upon it are these words:

Site of the home of  
JOHN MARLIN

Built in 1835. On January 10, 1839, it was attacked by 70 Indians who were repulsed and seven of their number slain. None of the four defenders of the home were injured.

**BUCKSNORT.** Near a bayou, not far from Fort Marlin, arose a settlement, east of the river, which someone in a bit of hilarity named "Bucksnort." The name stayed

with it as long as the settlement existed (about sixteen years). "Pen Pictures from the Garden of the World records: "Captain Thomas I. Smith and a man named Bales had stores there, one Cowan had a blacksmith shop, the first in the county after the return (from the Runaway Scrape). Bucksport was then a frontier settlement, where stores and whiskey were kept for a large region --- Later, the stores were owned by Smoot and James."

**TRAGEDY STRIKES AGAIN.** These neighboring settlements were little more than fairly established when tragedy struck again. The story was recorded by John Henry Brown, historian, veteran Texas frontiersman and statesman, and in Wilbarger's "Indian Depredations in Texas." It is a story of bloody massacre by the Indians, pursuit by irate fighters and a severe battle, in which Texans, though defeated, temporarily quelled the Indians, because they feared reprisals. The following was summarized from John Henry Brown's and Wilbarger's accounts:

**MORGAN MASSACRE.** East of the Brazos River near the Falls, the families of the Morgans and Marlins lived, together with families of some of their married children. Some resided above (north about six miles) and the others below (south about three miles) the present town of Marlin. At that time (winter of 1838-39) there were settlements on the river below for about twenty miles, but, above, excepting the families mentioned, the county was an uninhabited wilderness.

On Sunday night, January 1, 1839, members of the families of James Morgan, Mrs. Jones and Jackson Morgan were passing the night together at the home of George Morgan, who lived at what is now "Morgan's Point," six miles north of the present county seat of Falls County. Other members of the divided families were at the home of John Marlin (Fort Marlin). John and James Marlin were brothers and the others, of the same name, their children.



A little after dark, the home of George Morgan was attacked by Indians, before the inmates had time to prepare for defense. Mrs. Jackson Morgan and Miss Adeline Morgan, about fifteen, were tomahawked and scalped in the house within a few minutes. Miss Stacy Ann Marlin (afterwards the wife of William Morgan) was severely wounded and left for dead. Three small children were in the yard and one ten year old, Isaac Marlin, secreted himself behind the fence and remained undiscovered until the Indians left. Another child, Wesley Jones, ran to the house, but, seeing the red devils at work, ran out unobserved, followed by little Mary Marlin, and escaped.

Miss Stacy Ann Marlin, having been severely wounded and left for dead, recovered consciousness and feigned death. She was not scalped, as were the others. The Indians robbed the house and departed.

After the Indians left, ten year old Isaac Marlin, who had hidden behind the fence, entered the house and felt the pulses of the victims to ascertain if they were dead. His wounded sister, supposing him to be an Indian, remained motionless until he had left, when she crawled out. Isaac took the path to John Marlin's and ran the several miles to carry the message of death to kindred assembled there. Wesley Jones and Mary Marlin, the two other children, reached John Marlin's about daylight. The wounded Miss Marlin did not arrive until noon the day following the massacre.

John Marlin, his brother James, and William and Wilson Marlin, Jackson and George Morgan and Albert G. Gholson, hastened to the scene and found the facts of the terrible massacre to be as the boy, Isaac, had reported. The next day many people came from the lower settlements and the dead were consigned to their graves amid the sorrows of grief-stricken relatives and friends.

**DESCRIBES MORGAN HOUSE** About twenty-five years after the Morgan Massacre, the land upon which the Morgan house (Fort Morgan) stood came into possession of another early family of Falls County, Mr. and



### GEORGE MORGAN'S HOUSE

The log house was inhabited several decades after the terrible massacre of 1839 and eventually burned.

Mrs. John A. Fortune. A daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Fortune, Mary Alice, became the wife of Buck Killebrew, sheriff of Falls County in the 1860s, and a daughter of the Killebrews, Mary America, while living in the Morgan House, was married to William McComb, early builder and building contractor.

A few years ago, Mrs. McComb, eighty-five in 1946, described the Morgan House as being of "hewn log structure and chinked with mortar at that time. --- A smoke house, also built of the same material, stood nearby and a large oak tree grew within a short distance of the front door of the house, which opened west --- ." She related that as a small girl, she was told the dark spots on the floor and the door facings were made by the blood of the victims of the Indian attack of 1839.

About 1916, the old Morgan House, which had been moved a short distance from its original site, burned to the ground. It had been moved by Robert Fortune, uncle of Mrs. McComb, some time after the McComb family had moved elsewhere.



**JOHN MARLIN'S HOUSE ATTACKED.** Ten days after the Morgan Massacre (January 10, 1839) seventy Indians attacked the house of John Marlin, which was known as "Fort Marlin." Mr. Marlin and his son, Benjamin, and Garrett Meniffee and his son, Thomas, were in the house. The four occupants killed seven Indians and wounded others without receiving any injuries themselves and the Indians withdrew, not relishing such a "friendly" reception.

When the attack was made, Meniffee's Negro man, Hinchey, was at work a short distance away and "put out" for the settlements below at "double-quick." He ran twenty-five miles in less time than a good horse could have traveled the same distance, Mr. Brown recorded in his history, upon authority of those who knew of the incident. "Hinchey admitted he was badly scared."

As a result of the news Hinchey brought, a company was soon raised to go to the relief of the John Marlin fort, but when the company arrived there the Indians had left. The courage of the four men in the house and the manner in which they overcame seventy Indians in a few moments, resulted in the Centennial Commission of the State of Texas, placing a Memorial on the site of "Fort Marlin" in 1936. (See Page 64.)

**BATTLE AT MORGAN'S POINT, OR BRYANT'S DEFEAT.** After discussions of the Morgan Massacre and the repulse of the Indians at Fort Marlin, the people decided they must either pursue and defeat the Indians or retreat to the lower settlements. They chose to fight and soon forty-eight men, under Benjamin Bryant of Bryant's Station (on the Brazos thirty miles below the Falls), were on the trail. They followed the trail to the river near Morgan's Point, crossed the river and found a deserted camp of the red devils. About a mile from the deserted camp, they came upon a fresh trail, counting sixty-four fresh horse tracks, besides moccasin tracks of a great number of Indians on foot. They crossed to the east side again and observed smoke rising from the prairie, which was on fire. They thought the Indians had set fire to John Marlin's house and hastened down



with all speed, only to discover their mistake. They encamped for the night and next morning, January 16, started again. They found the Indians had plundered houses north of John Marlin's. At Morgan's Point, they discovered the Indians in the open post oak woods near a dry ravine.

**CHIEF JOSE MARIA IN COMMAND.** The noted chief, Jose Maria, was riding in front in perfect nonchalance. Slowly he rode back to the rear — when he saw Bryant and his men — halted, pulled off his gauntlet and, taking deliberate aim, fired at Joseph Boren, cutting his coat sleeve. Jose Maria gave the signal for battle and action started.

Captain Bryant ordered a charge, which was gallantly made, and in which he was wounded. Command went to Ethan Stroud. The Indians fired one volley and fell back to a ravine, at the same time David W. Campbell fired at Chief Jose Maria, the ball striking him in the breast, but not wounding him seriously. At the same time, Albert Gholson fired at the Chief and killed the horse he was riding.

The Texans followed the savages to the ravine and fired from the bank. The Indians retreated down the ravine toward some timber in the "River Bottom" and when the Texans saw the movement, a number of them flanked around and got in the ravine below to hold them in check. This caused the Indians to fall back to their original position. The Texans came to the conclusion they had won the day and became careless — every man acting upon his own initiative.

The shrewd Chief Maria realized this, sprang from the ravine at the head of his men and opened a terrible and unexpected fire, which threw the Texans into some confusion. Their commander ordered the men to retreat to a point two hundred yards distant, where he expected to re-form them, also, to draw the Indians from the ravine, so they could not have its protection.

Owing to prevailing confusions, the order was understood as an unqualified retreat. Panic seized the men

and the wily old chief, at the head of his men, charged furiously, at the same time, the savages making the welkin ring with demoniac yells. Several Texans were killed at the onset, the rest were demoralized and the rout became general. The Indians pursued them for four miles, as ten Texans were killed and five wounded — all within a mile and a half of the original battle ground.

Plummer, Ward and Barton were killed at the ravine, before the retreat began. David W. Campbell, not hearing the order to retreat, was about surrounded, when the brave Captain Eli Chandler, mounted, rushed to his rescue and took him up behind him. Jackson Bowers, having lost his horse, mounted on a pony behind William McGrew, at the very moment his arm was broken by a bullet. Soon afterwards his brother came up with him and told him to get off the pony and on his larger horse. Bowers sprang from the pony, but owing to the plunging of the horse and his inability to mount quickly with his broken arm, the Indians came upon them. His brother defended him to the last, but seeing him fall dead, put the spurs to his horse and escaped. William N. P. Marlin was severely wounded before the retreat began and was unable to mount his horse, but David Cobb ran to him and lifted him to his horse at the imminent risk of his own life.

Wilson Reed, a daring young man, was knocked from his horse by coming in contact with a tree. The Indians were close upon him and coming at full speed, yelling and brandishing their tomahawks. He cried, "Oh, Lord, Mary Ann is a widow!"; but just then, someone came riding by, took him up and bore him off unhurt.

The Indians lost about as many men as did the Texans, although the latter were driven from the field. They were elated over their double victory and became more daring than ever, until checked by a signal defeat near Little River, known as "Bird's Fight."

The names of those who participated in the battle at Morgan's Point, were as follows: A. J. Powers, Washington McGrew, — Ward, Armstrong Barton, —

Plummer, Alfred Eaton, Hugh A. Henry, William Fullerton, A. J. Webb, — Doss, Charles Solls (or Salls), William N. P. Marlin, — Bryant, G. W. Morgan, Enock M. Jones, John R. Henry, Lewis B. and William C. Powers, Henry Haigwood, Eli Chandler, Ethan Stroud, Joseph Boren, William McGrew, Andrew McMillan, Clay and David Cobb, Richard Teel, Albert G. Gholson, Michael Castleman, Wilson Reed, Wiley Carter, John Welsh, Britton Dawson, R. H. Mathews, David W. Campbell, Nathan Campbell, — Smith, Jeremiah McDaniel, Walter Campbell, William Henry, Hugh Henry, John Marlin, Wilson Marlin, Joseph McCandless, John Tucker and Thomas Duncan.

In the charge and retreat, the ten first names of the company in the above list were killed and the next five wounded. All of those killed fell within a mile and a half of the battleground, most of them within half a mile, being overtaken on foot. Plummer, Ward, and Barton were killed at the ravine.

**JOSE MARIA SMOKES PIPE OF PEACE.** Jose Maria, so long the dread of the frontier, but afterwards the most pacific and civilized chief on the government reserve, always acknowledged he was whipped and retreating until he saw the panic and confusion among the Texans. It is considered certain, if the Texans had observed the order of their commander, they would have won a victory and the old chief, himself, would not have lived to tell the story of the fight.

Jose Maria visited Bryant's Station (thirty miles down the river from the Falls) years afterwards and offered Bryant his pipe of peace. Bryant insisted that Jose Maria smoke first, since he won the fight, and the old chief proudly did so. (Captain Benjamin Bryant was the great-grandfather of Sparks McKay, formerly of Falls County and State Highway Maintenance Engineer, and Mrs. Stella McKay (Sam) Mewhinney of Buckholts, Texas.)



**MEMORIALS ON THE GROUND.**Reference has already been made to a Memorial to mark the place of John Marlin's house — Fort Marlin, south of Marlin. Other Memorials, commemorating the terrible Morgan Massacre and the resulting battle, Bryant's Defeat, were placed on the scenes of those events by the Centennial Commission of the State of Texas in 1936.

One of the Memorials stands about six miles north and a few degrees west of Marlin, on the so-called "Rock-dam Road" and carries this inscription.

400 yards northeast  
is the  
site of the home of  
GEORGE MORGAN  
Indians attacking the house on the  
night of January 1, 1839  
killed  
George Morgan  
Mrs. George Morgan  
Mrs. Jackson Morgan  
Miss Adeline Morgan

The other Memorial stands on the west line of State Highway 6, seven miles north of Marlin and carries this inscription:

**INDIAN BATTLEFIELD**

At this side, near the pioneer home of George Morgan, a battle took place, January 10, 1839, between settlers in this region and Indians under Chief Jose Maria in which the colonists were defeated. A treaty with these Indians made soon after, brought comparative peace to the region.

**LITTLE RESPITE FOR PEOPLE AT FALLS.** Not long after the battle at Morgan's Point, treaties with the Indians, in line with President Sam Houston's policy, were aimed to bring peace to the people. However, the people at the falls remained on guard day and night and in continuous suspense and hardships because of Indians and revengeful Mexicans with evil schemes. Viesca, whose name was changed to Fort Milam, late in 1835, was hardly able to hold itself together. More and more people left for the more thickly settled areas, or to the east side of the river. A number of men tried to re-

habilitate or revive it, including Captains Barron, Barnes, Ethan Stroud and others. Even, J. G. W. Pierson, agent for Empresario S. C. Robertson and who had laid out the townsite, had moved to Grimes County. (Later, Mr. Pierson, came back and continued to help build Falls County.)

The term for the serving of rangers, enlisted to protect the frontiers, expired in 1837. Early in 1838 the state Land office was created and George B. Erath wrote, "It was thought surveyors would give protection to frontiers without expense to the Republic." Near the end of Sam Houston's term as president (1838), for these reasons and, also, because Houston had negotiated treaties with the Indians, hardly more than fifty men were enrolled in the service of the Republic, either by law, or under Houston's authority. The citizens had to do their own defending. A few rangers and frontiersmen came in and out of the fort at the Falls on various missions, but the number there for permanent defense, was far from assuring. Many of the settlers were forced to retire, leaving vacant houses and idle farms. Those who remained sought the safety of the fort and left to farm only when guarded by soldiers or advised by scouts of brief intervals of safety. The Indians, though encouraged to be peaceful and stop their pillaging, continued their unpredictable antics.

**MORE RANGERS UNDER PRESIDENT LAMAR.** When Mirabeau B. Lamar became President late in 1838, succeeding Sam Houston, he pursued a different policy toward the Indians. President Houston had sought to deal with the savages by means of treaties, and friendliness. President Lamar reversed the policy, believing the Indians had forfeited their rights by their atrocities and wars. Through his influence and public demand, Congress (1839) made appropriations for better defense of the expanding colonies. It was felt it was time that the frontiersman be given aid and that "leniency toward savages had no place in the practical world of the frontiers where hardships were plentiful without constant Indian troubles. The government, also, was bound to

protect immigrants who were invited by the Republic's homestead law to come to Texas and the Indian was regarded as the encroacher," according to Mrs. Lillian Schiller St. Romain in "A History of Lott and Its Vicinity." It is natural to assume that the people at the Falls were joyous upon learning that Congress had authorized competent forces to protect the region.

George B. Erath wrote that "early in 1839, Cherokees in eastern Texas and a combination of Indians on the frontier, instigated by a Mexican, Cordova, prepared to make a descent on the settlements (Falls area) in concert with Mexican troops. President Lamar ordered several companies of rangers in the field; I had command of one company from Milam County; two companies took post between the Brazos and Trinity rivers, which were from Robertson County; Captain Bird from Fort Bend County occupied Little River; and Lieutenant Daniels from Houston, with about thirty men, was stationed at the Falls of the Brazos ---." Erath estimated 5,000 Indians and Mexicans and their families were concentrated north of the Falls on South Bosque, "restless and depredating." This did much to create fear at the Falls and only the sturdiest stood their ground.

**BIRD'S FIGHT.** In May, 1839, rangers were on the move and a company of thirty-one arrived at the Falls (Fort Milam) under command of the intrepid Captain John Bird, who had been stationed at Little River. The company arrived late in May, well-mounted and equipped, and left on a scouting expedition against depredating Indians, known to be toward the west. The expedition was destined to be of decisive importance to the Falls County area, for after it ended, people of this area were freed of major depredations of Indians, who had waged war against them ever since the first white man arrived.

By 1:00 P.M., Captain Bird and company arrived at Fort Griffin, four miles west of the present town of Little River, in what is now Bell County and learned Indians were near. Five miles from Fort Griffin they



found a freshly-made trail, followed it and came upon twenty-seven Comanches, busy skinning buffalo. The rangers charged and the Comanches fled in every direction. The rangers pursued the main body and, after three miles, came upon the same Indians, who had converged on that point and arrayed in battle order. The rangers charged again and the Indians fled, again. The rangers' horses were jaded and the pursuit was abandoned. Retracing their steps about a half mile, the rangers came to a small creek (later named Bird Creek) and found themselves surrounded by forty Indians, who began shooting their arrows in deadly persistency. The rangers took shelter in a small ravine where there was a spring of water, although the Indians tried desperately to prevent it.

While a council of war was in progress, the rangers saw a large body of Comanches approaching, making three hundred savages in all, led by the famous chief, Buffalo Hump. The Indians arrayed themselves in battle order, hesitating long enough for the rangers to count them, although one ranger remarked afterwards, "Thar warn't no time for countin' Ingins."

The Comanches charged, their wild war-whoops mixing with gun fire and the din of battle, but were repulsed with heavy loss. Three times the Indians charged and were driven back, their last charge bringing them very close to the ravine and the rangers being almost surrounded. The intrepid Bird fell early in battle. Six other rangers fell, killed or wounded, and the survivors neared exhaustion. It seemed the twenty-five remaining men were doomed, when James Robinnett, upon whom the command had devolved with Captain Bird's death, swore to his comrades he would kill the chief on the next charge.

He did not have long to wait, for Buffalo Hump came, dressed in full uniform, with an immense head-gear of buffalo horns and mounted on an American horse, presenting a most ludicrous and formidable appearance. Taking deliberate aim, young Robinnett fired and, sure enough, Buffalo Hump fell. Ten or twelve Indians

surrounded him and carried him away. After one more luckless charge, the Indians retreated to a hill with heavy loss of men and horses.

The rangers stayed in the ravine all night and next morning, not seeing Indians, went back to Fort Griffin in double-quick time. When the story of the battle got around, a large force of volunteers collected and went to Bird Creek, gathered the bodies of Captain Bird and his comrades into a huge coffin and carried them to the banks of Little River and buried them, near the site of Old Fort Griffin.

On the site of the battle on Bird Creek, near Temple, the Centennial Commission in 1936 placed a Memorial upon which are inscribed these words:

BIRD CREEK  
INDIAN BATTLE  
May 26, 1839

This marker commemorates  
the death of

Captain John Bird  
Sergeant William Weaver  
Jesse E. Nash  
H. M. Hall  
Thomas Gray

and the heroic and successful battle of a ranger force of 34 against  
240 Indians.

**INDIANS PUSH OUT.** Historians agree that the Bird Creek battle, in which the chief, Buffalo Hump, was killed, was decisive in ending Indian depredations in this section. After the battle, the Indians were pursued westward and, although a few straggling savages committed minor raids in the area of Central Texas, there was comparative peace. Other major engagements against the Comanches at San Antonio, Gonzales and the Upper Colorado brought disbandment of the Comanches and peace along the frontier. The Cherokees, in the same year, were defeated and expelled from East Texas, according to Barker's "Reading in Texas History."

**SETTLEMENT INCREASES IN FALLS AREA.** Aside from small bands of Waco and Tehuacana Indians, near the present site of Waco, and others, who roamed up and down the river, stealing and committing minor atrocities, the area around the Falls was considered fairly safe. Fort Milam (old Viesca) on the west side, for a long time, remained under guard, offering protection for the people, most of whom lived on the east side. Late in 1839, attempts were made to settle around some springs where the present town of Marlin is located, but the Indians were troublesome, even that far from the fort, and disasters prevented success.

Settlement in the 1840s was gradual, made up largely of medium class farmers of Tennessee and Alabama, some records reveal. Their names are not known, although "Pen Pictures from the Garden of the World" mentioned the Menefees, Smiths, Seviere's, the Marlins, Smoots', Jameses, and others, around Bucksnot; the families of Barclay, Moffett, Hodge, Pevyhouse, Rose and others on Blue Ridge; families of Coleman, Barton, Morgan, Killebrew and others near the present site of Marlin; families of Christopher Stern, Judge Albert G. Perry and a few others at the Falls; families of Whitaker, Covington, Powers, Blain and others around the present site of Reagan. Several of the families had a few slaves, but there were probably less than twenty-five in the county's present boundaries in the 1840s, the book records.





## CHAPTER V

### Proof of Indians in Falls County

By F. P. Goddard

**INDIAN HISTORY IN RELICS.** In a strict interpretation of the word history, little is known about the history of the Indians who inhabited Falls County, for history suggests a written account of something from the past, and written accounts of the activities of Falls County Indians are not available.

Yet we are persuaded that the Indians had lived here for many generations, had developed an advanced agricultural way of living, carried on trading with Indian tribes from other parts of Texas, and were present in goodly numbers when the first white settlers invaded their territory. These facts are not known through written history. They are the conclusions reached because of the study of relics the Indians left behind them. The Indian arrowheads, spear points, pottery, metates and mano stones are convincing in proving the existence of Indian settlements in Falls County for hundreds of years.

The history of Falls County Indians is not then a written history. It is rather the history presented in the Indian relics found in our generation, supplemented by such facts as we glean from the accounts of the first white settlers to meet the Indians.

The word relic, applied to those weapons and tools of the Indians found today, is in itself suggestive. It comes from the Latin word, *relicta*, and connotes something left behind and marked by use. The Indian relics found in Falls County do not constitute a written record, but they do indicate much about the life of the Indians. By using a little imagination, it is possible to reconstruct much of the life of our local Indians. On the basis of the relics found in the past, it is possible to write a fair history of the Indians who preceded the white men.

**INDIAN TRAILS INDICATED.** The question naturally arises as to why there were so many Indians in this section of the state. The first explanation is indicated by an old map in the possession of the Pierson Family.

The map was drawn by the late Edmund Pierson, surveyor and son of J. G. W. Pierson, also surveyor, who laid out Viesca, capital site of Robertson's Nashville Colony in the middle 1830s. Mr. Pierson (Edmund) was one time Falls County surveyor and thoroughly informed on Indian habits and trails through records of his father and intercourse with pioneer citizens.

Members of the Pierson family (living in the County), said (1946) most of the papers of their father were in various offices and places for safe-keeping and did not describe the map, which is a map of central Texas. On it were located the three main traces or Indian trails across the state. These traces were used because of the need of going from east to west across the Brazos River, at those points where the river might be forded. One of the three main crossings of the Brazos River was the old falls of the Brazos located about eight miles below Marlin. An alternative crossing in dry weather was the ford about six miles above Marlin. When the white people began to settle in Central Texas, there was this great Indian trail beginning at the old falls of the Brazos, skirting the Blue Ridge District, and winding its circuitous way to the Spanish settlements in East Texas.

**FALLS AREA ALLURING TO INDIANS.** Just as modern cities grow up today at sea port, at highway junctions, or at railroad centers, so there was a large Indian population in Falls County because it was on the main Indian highway or trace. It was where the Brazos River could be crossed.

The author knows from personal observation of one hundred seventy six sites of Indian camps or villages in Falls County, some so small that they were inhabited by one or two families, others so large that they stretched for two miles. Of course these sites were not all inhabited by the Indians at one time. These settlements



cover a period of hundreds of years. On the other hand, this writer does not pretend to knowledge of all the Indian camp sites in the County, and what is more, he does not believe that all the camp sites have been found, or will be found for many years. Many sites have been covered by debris and vegetation. It is safe to make the observation that the County was thickly settled according to Indian standards.

There were many reasons for the many Indian camps. The County had those natural geographical and physical characteristics which the Indians valued highly in choosing their homes. In addition to the Brazos River, there were many creeks and streams. These furnished fish and clams for food. They also provided the Indians with a well-defined series of trails.

There was an abundance of timber providing wood for fires, wood for bows and arrows, wood for spears, wood for the stays of Indian huts and tents. The woods also provided concealing protection from marauding bands of other Indians. And the woods finally provided the habitat of the game the Indians depended on for their food.

The character of the soil attracted the Indians. Several classifications have been made of Falls County soils and there are almost a hundred different kinds. There are many ridges of sand and gravel which furnished water with a minimum effort of digging. There are rich fields which furnished the Indians with maize, beans, calabashes and watermelons without too much work. And there are many sand hills running through the county which furnished an ideal camping ground.

It is possible to stand on many of the Indian camp sites today and see in the surrounding terrain what appealed to the Indians, proximity to the Brazos and creeks for food and travel, timber for supplies and protection, high ground to provide drainage during the rainy season, nearby slopes admirably suited to agriculture, stony hill-sides, which furnished the stone for tools and utensils, clay banks as the source of materials for pottery.

The Indians may not have had book learning, but through experience they had learned what they needed to make life agreeable, and Falls County had those characteristics which appealed to the Indians. The Indians were here in great numbers because they had been attracted by the same characteristics which later were to attract the white settlers to Falls County.

**SOME INDIAN TRIBES IN THE COUNTY.** The Indians found in Falls County when the white settlers first came belonged to one of Texas' five great groups of Indians, that including the Tonkawas, Tehuacanas, Huacas and related tribes. These tribes have left their names with us in the names of white settlements. There is a portion of the Battle farm south of Marlin, about three miles, still called Tonkawa. This Indian settlement on Tonkawa also emphasizes how the white people chose the same land for their settlements as appealed to the Indians because not far from Tonkawa was the old white settlement of Bucksport.

Now while it is true that the Falls County Indians belonged to the group mentioned above, it should be noted that the Indians of Texas were great travelers and there was much intercourse between the Indians of different sections of the state. The Falls County Indians fought with the Apaches in the southwest, the Comanches of the northwest, the Carancawas of the coastal area, and the Texas Indians of the east. When they were not fighting with other Indians they traded with them.

A few years ago, a Negro on the Hon. George H. Carter's farm at the Falls of the Brazos brought him a handful of Indian arrowheads he had picked up on a camp site. He also had a peculiar piece of metal shaped like a bay leaf. He had unknowingly picked up an Indian relic which proved the intercourse of the Falls County Tonkawas with the San Antonio Apaches for the relic was a metal spear head of the type so prevalent around San Antonio.

**INDIANS WERE NOMADIC.** It should be noted that the Falls County Indians were nomadic in habit, and from the observation of white settlers, travelled many miles to gather fruits and nuts, or to kill game. There is much data for the supposition that the Indians were accustomed to inhabit various localities depending upon the season and the supply of food. They had their winter homes and summer homes. In this connection, it should be remarked that the Indians have left very few relics in the bottom of the Brazos River. They had learned from bitter experience of the dangers of an overflow. Their camps were on the ridges back from the river, safe from the ravages of the floods.

**EARLY INDIAN CAMPS INDICATED.** All the Indian camps of Falls County are marked by similar relics, flint arrowheads and spear points, flat stones hollowed in the center with other stones of harder rock, evidently for the grinding of corn, scrapers, celts, stone hammers, tomahawks, and other implements. Most have kitchen middins on which was thrown the waste from their eating, and these are marked by decayed bones. All have an abundance of chipped flint, some of which was produced in the making of flint artifacts, and some by action of the elements.

But although the camps seem typical in their relics, there are individual characteristics which would indicate different tribes, and different levels of development. The Indian camp sites on Mrs. N. D. Buie's farm at the end of the Rockdam Road have yielded several fine specimens of incised decorating of shell work and bead work, indicating a high state of civilization. About half the camps in the County are marked by the prevalence of potsherds, fragments of pottery. Only the more advanced tribes made pottery. In fact less than fifteen years ago, it was stated by the Smithsonian Institute that there was no Indian pottery in Central Texas. This statement has been disproved and there is an abundance of Indian pottery. In this pottery are found the finger prints of the Indians because it was pressed out by hand.



Two large Indian camps on the Brazos River near Satin have yielded some of the Venetian glass beads brought to Mexico by the Spaniards for trading purposes. And then there is the wide variation in the quality of the stone work done by the Indians. The crudest work was done by the Indians inhabiting one section of the Hunnicutt Farm on the old Belton road. This camp is probably the oldest of the County. The Indians had not learned to use handles with their axes. Instead they used hand axes or fist axes. At the other extreme is the fine work done by some of the Indians on tiny bird points or large spear points. The blades were paper-thin. The artifacts were symmetrical. They were highly polished, and indicated artisans who took pride in the beauty of their work.

Some Indian camp sites yield relics of more highly colored stone than others. There is a camp on Elm and Big Creeks where half the arrowheads found are of red flint. Evidently the Indians in this camp had an appreciation of colors. In about twelve of the camps are found what are commonly believed to be fish net sinkers. These stones are generally about twice the size of a large pecan and notched at both ends. It has been suggested that they were used as weights for fish nets. Some of these stones possess unusual beauty and are highly polished. Of these it is said that they were lucky and the owner made charms of them. One boat stone has been found in the County, a stone hollowed out to look like a boat. This was blessed by the medicine man, and tied to a boat, was supposed to ward off evil spirits, prevent the boat from capsizing, and keep the owner safe.

The conclusion must be reached that a wide variation occurred in the living standards of the different tribes of this area. Either there were Indians of a very low and a very high level at one and the same time, or through the centuries the County has been inhabited by tribes of different levels of culture.

**LAST SETTLEMENTS OF INDIANS.** The author has talked with old Negroes who remembered the last two

Indian settlements in Falls County. One was located on the Newbold and Francks farms about three miles south of Marlin on the road to the Falls. This was a small settlement with only five or six families. And these Indians did not live there all through the year. They traveled over much of Central Texas, returning to their home for about five months of each winter. The other settlement was located on what is called Hog Island, south of Big Creek and north of Reagan. This was a slightly larger group of Indians, but they were of the same type as the ones on the Newbold Farm.

The men were excellent hunters and provided the white settlers with all kinds of game in return for the necessities they needed from the white people. But there was no profit in this trade for the white people because these Indians were notorious beggars. The Negroes claimed that the Indians begged or stole more hams and bacon than the game they traded to the white people. The picture painted of the last surviving Indians in the County is not in accord with the glamorous view of them obtained through literature or the movies.

There is an explanation for this however. The last Indians in the County were not representative of the Indians who had lived here in former days. These were only a last sad remnant. There had been fights with the white people in 1839 which had smashed the power of the Indians and killed many of their finer men. And following this the Indians from Texas had been removed to the Indian territory. The few straggling Indians who remained in Central Texas were there only on sufferance of the white people.

**INDIANS DRIVEN OUT.** It was in 1839 that the Indians were driven out of Falls County. In that year occurred the shooting of one of the Marlins south of Big Creek, the Morgan Massacre, the fight with Captain Bryant's men, and the celebrated Bird's Creek Battle. It is customary to dismiss these clashes with the Indians by accepting them as part of the troubles of a year of general Indian uprisings. However, imagination might help us to account for the happenings in Falls County.

First of all, it should be remembered that the white people were but recently settled in the County in 1839. As a matter of fact, they had abandoned the settlement of Viesca during the War with Mexico, with the men going off to fight the Mexicans, and the women and children returning to East Texas for safety. They did not return to Falls County until 1838, and then they made a new settlement, called Bucksport, about three miles south of the present site of Marlin. When the Indians went on the warpath all over the state in 1839, it was only natural that they should vent their rage most on the newest settlements. Perhaps it was the number of new settlements which made the Indians realize that they must try to drive out the white people before they became too numerous. In 1839, the Indians of Falls County were fighting those whom they considered newcomers, people who had recently appropriated their lands.

And in the second place, the author offers this explanation for the various people who were attacked. Both the site of the attack on the Morgans were close to the Brazos River crossings mentioned above. Indians from the west could cross the Brazos at the Falls, attack the Marlins, and retreat in a hurry back across the river. The same thing was true of the settlement to the north. It was not far from the river ford to the home of the Morgans. This home might be attacked, and the attackers could get away in a hurry across the river.

There is a third explanation. John Marlin's home was located on what has since turned out to be an Indian burial ground. The Morgan's home was located on the largest Indian camp site and burial ground in the County. Like all primitive people, the Indians had a reverent superstition about their dead. Since 1839 was the year of a general uprising among the Indians, is it not reasonable to suppose that they chose for attack in this county, those people who were desecrating their burial grounds? Even white people would resent invaders who in addition to dispossessing them of their land, desecrated their cemeteries by building homes on them.

The site of Morgan's Point as described by the late Edmund Pierson was about half way between the historic



marker at the end of the Rockdam Road and the marker six miles north of Marlin on the Waco highway. The Morgans were entertaining some of their friends when the Indians attacked. Some seven or eight people were killed and scalped. One girl who was scalped, lived in Marlin for many years.

A Negro escaped and ran most of the distance between Morgan's Point and Bryant's Station, a fort where soldiers were stationed, not far from the present site of Franklin. The soldiers came to the scene of the massacre in a hurry. They tracked down the Indians but walked into an ambush, and Captain Bryant was wounded and nine of his soldiers were killed, and many others wounded. It was a disastrous encounter for the white people.

But it was during the winter of the same year that a rapidly growing band of soldiers caught up with the raiding Indians west of the Falls of the Brazos and carried on a running fight with them for miles and miles into the Bird's Creek area of Bell County, finally smashing completely the power of this group of Indians. The remnants of the Indian forces scattered to other portions of the state attaching themselves to tribes which were moved north into Indian Territory, and only a few occasional Indians were to be found in Central Texas.

**RELICS INDICATE HOW THEY LIVED.** Today the Indians' presence in Falls County is indicated only by the relics left behind. Like the later white people, they could not carry their possessions with them into the life beyond the grave. Naked they came into this world, and naked they would leave it. But the Indians did have a lively faith in the Happy Hunting Grounds, and their relics are found more readily today because of this belief.

Contrary to popular belief which ascribes to Indian battles the reason for finding several arrowheads in one place, the more reasonable explanation for finding relics in numbers is the hypothesis of a camp site. The arrowheads are not found by themselves but along with spear points and mano stones and metates and pottery. The relics indicate rather a way of living than a battle.

And the various burials uncovered by farmers plowing and gravel haulers lead to the inescapable conclusion that the Indians buried with their dead their choice possessions and those weapons and utensils and tools they thought would be needed beyond the grave. The tilling of the ground and the action of the elements have scattered Indian possessions, but in large measure the relics found today were buried with the dead. In three quarters of the camps of this County, Indian bones have been found. It is rather the unusual camp in which, because of the character and drainage of the soil, some evidence of Indian bones is not found.

This theory is further bolstered by the observation of those Indian burials which have been uncovered in recent years, like the seven graves on the Criswell Farm on Elm and Big Creeks, or the Buie Farm at the old Kyser gravel pits, or the graves south of Dot, or the graves on the Francks Farm. In all these instances where skeletons were uncovered whole, there were also found many arrowheads and spear points and potsherds and pieces of flint ready to be worked into weapons. The Indians buried with their deceased what they thought they would need in the Happy Hunting Grounds beyond the grave.

Farmers plowing into these burials have scattered over their fields the relics now being discovered, or the action of rain and wind and erosion has uncovered them. Most of the Indian bones uncovered have been reburied. A few have been taken for the purpose of study. It is of interest that most of the Indians bones showed evidence of arthritis. And their teeth showed the prevalence of pyorrhea. Their teeth were also flat on top from eating corn ground in metates and mixed with grit.

It is possible to reconstruct in large measure the life of the Indians who inhabited Falls County. This is done on the basis of the relics they have left behind. These relics are largely stone with a scattering of bone and shell and clay. The gap in our knowledge is that which would be filled by information on the vegetal and organic relics left behind. These unfortunately have all disap-

peared because of the character of our soil and climate. We do not have the hot dry climate of Arizona and New Mexico. We do not find well-preserved specimens of basketry, foods, woodwork, leather work. It would be a false assumption to assume that because we cannot find such remains, the Falls County Indians were simply stone workers, for many of the stone relics we find, indicate that they were used in conjunction with stone and wood and bone. Arrowheads are of no value by themselves. They had to be fitted to the ends of arrows. They had to be shot in bows of wood with strings of leather or reeds. There is simply a gap in our history which we must fill in by using our imagination.

**RELICS—PROOF OF INDIANS.** Perhaps enough has been written to prove that although the Indians of Falls County had no history in the sense of a written record, they have left a record behind them in the utilitarian and ornamental relics we are discovering today. They left behind them enough relics, marked by their use, so that we may well wonder at the ingenuity and sense of beauty of the people who enjoyed the advantages of Falls County before the white people chose it for their homes and the homes of their children.





### FALLS COUNTY ARTIFACTS

**Upper Left Group:** In the upper left hand corner are samples of the knives and spear points found in Falls County. In the middle row are two of the scarce corner-tang knives. Third from left in the third row is a bay-leaf tomahawk. Above the two corner-tang knives is a duck bill scraper.

**Lower Left Group:** In the lower left hand corner are the "bird points" used as arrow heads on birds and small game.

**Upper Right Group:** The fifteen almond-shaped stones knotted at either end, found in the upper right, are "net sinkers" — weights for fish nets and traps. At the upper left and right of this corner are two polished deer bone awls, found in an Indian burial. There are two blunted arrow heads called "bunts," used to stun game which would be taken back to camp alive and kept until wanted.

**Lower Right Group:** The large stone in the lower right picture is a metate or bowl for grinding corn. To the left and below it is another metate, much smaller, probably used for grinding pigments for painting. Third from the left, in the bottom row, is a hand ax, grooved to fit the palm of the hand, used by primitive Indians who had not discovered the value of handles. Other stones in this picture are mano stones, used as pestles in grinding, or scrapers for preparing hides for curing.

The pictured are all artifacts shown are one-twelfth of actual size. All specimens are from Falls County Indian camps sites and are in the collection of the Reverend F. P. Goddard of Marlin.

## CHAPTER VI

### More Trouble With Mexico

**WOES WITH MEXICO INCREASE.** While the people watched the Indians and protected their homes, they had another problem. Mexico had signed the Treaty of Velasco in 1836 and Santa Anna had pledged support in seeing that Mexico respected it, but the country, under control of unscrupulous leaders, sought to ignore it. It refused to recognize Texas Independence, although France, Great Britain and Belgium had recognized the Republic and others were ready to do so.

Rumors of plans of the Mexican government to invade Texas persisted during President Houston's administration, but nothing came of them. Lamar became president in 1838 and after a series of events, Sam Houston was president again. In 1849, the Mexicans sent expeditions into Texas to establish Mexican claims to non-recognition of the Treaty of Velasco, signed after the Battle of San Jacinto. In order to understand the trend toward another war, the reader should keep in mind the history of Texas, as a whole. Mexican troops took possession of Goliad, Refugio, San Antonio and Victoria, alarming all of Texas and it appeared Sam Houston, as president, again was destined to take part in another fateful war.

Because a few Falls County people were directly involved in this Mexican invasion, a few phases of it are recorded herewith.

**FALLS COUNTY REPRESENTED IN THE DAWSON MASSACRE.** Early Sunday morning, September 11, 1842, the people of San Antonio were awakened by the roar of cannon and, soon, the town was in possession of 1,400 Mexicans under Adrian Woll. A few people escaped, hurried to Seguin and Gonzales to give the alarm. Immediately two hundred and two Texans assembled for

defense of their homes and by sunset marched over the country without roads and took possession of Salado Creek, a little below the present town of New Braunfels. There they found 400 Mexican Cavalry, 1,050 Infantrymen and two pieces of artillery, commanded by Adrian Woll.

At sunrise, September 18, a battle started and at 1:00 P. M. 800 more Mexicans (infantrymen) arrived. A desperate twenty-minute battle took place with such loss to the Mexicans that they dropped back to the protection of artillery and more advantageous positions. A Mexican rebel and forty Cherokee and Carrizo Indians reinforced the Mexicans. As the battle continued, Mexican losses were heavy and, late in the afternoon, Woll reformed his men on a ridge and remained there until sunset.

Meanwhile, another company of fifty-five volunteer Texans under command of Captain Nicholas Dawson was approaching, in an effort to reinforce the Texans in Battle. The Mexican cavalry, not engaged and numbering 400 men, attacked Dawson's men and the Texans found themselves quickly in direct and deadly range of Mexican cannon, while the enemy was too far away to be harmed by their rifles. Dawson's men were falling under the deadly fire and death, or surrender, were the only alternatives. The Texans tried to surrender, but their signals were ignored. The entire number would have been wiped out had it not been for a few more honorable Mexican officers. Of the original fifty five men in Dawson's company, forty, including Dawson, were left dead on the field, three escaped and thirteen were captured. Four of those captured were wounded, one dying afterwards in prison at Perote, Mexico. Among the prisoners was Allen H. Morrell, son of the Reverend Z. N. Morrell. (Later, after serving time in a Mexican prison, Allen Morrell settled on the place at Stranger, now owned by Mr. and Mrs. Grady Hair.)

**MEXICANS LEAVE SAN ANTONIO.** After Dawson's Massacre and the Battle of Salado Creek, volunteers, including such leaders as Colonel Matthew Caldwell, Captains Jesse Billingley and W. J. Wallace, Major J.



S. Mayfield, Samuel H. Walker (later distinguished as a Texas ranger), Captain John C. Hays, Colonel John H. Moore, Colonel Edward Burleson and others, continued the fight for Texas and on September 20, 1842, General Woll and troops retired from San Antonio. Texas volunteers followed them to the Rio Grande River.

**TEXANS RETALIATE.** Feeling ran high after Woll's evacuation of San Antonio, not only because of the invasion, itself, but because of the Mexican attitude. The country was placed on a war basis and at San Antonio a considerable military force assembled and was placed under command of General Alexander Somervell. The force marched to the Rio Grande, ostensibly to invade Mexico. A captain of one of the companies was J. G. W. Pierson, who had laid off Viesca at the Falls of the Brazos in 1834.

On the Rio Grande extremely cold weather was encountered and action was delayed. On December 19th, (1842) the men were ordered to make ready to return home. Despite discomforts—lack of food, clothing and ammunition—three hundred refused to obey. (The army consisted of volunteers.)

**FALLS COUNTY MEN IN THE MIER EXPEDITION.** The three hundred men re-organized themselves into companies, one of which was in command of Captain J. G. W. Pierson, marched down the river and encamped opposite the town of Mier. On December 23rd., they crossed the Rio Grande into Mexico, took possession of Mier, and, after nearly two days, re-crossed to the Texas side. Later, they were informed that General Pedro Ampudia with 2,000 Mexicans had arrived. They resolved to re-cross and give battle. Some of the men, including leaders, recognized the difficulties, with their limited ammunition and supplies, of attacking 2,000 well equipped, well supplied men, and returned home. Others chose to stay and fight.

The exact number of men who remained under command of Captain Fisher is not known, although the original number was estimated at three hundred. Captain

Fisher left forty-two men to guard the camp and on December 25, a dark, cold night with a drizzling rain, drove into Mier, answering the challenge of Mexican sentries with rifle shots. They heard a Mexican officer vainly trying to call his startled men to the charge. In the plaza and around the town, a terrific battle took place, in which the Texans would have won, if they had known to fight a little longer. However, in the face of what appeared to be overwhelming odds, they surrendered, after inflicting heavy losses upon the enemy.

On the way to Mexico City for imprisonment, the Texans escaped, but after almost starving and dying of cold in the mountains, they were captured and taken back to the scene of their attempted escape. As punishment by a decree from Santa Anna, they were ordered to be shot, but yielding to remonstrances of General Mexia and some of his officers, the sentence was commuted to "diezmo" (one in ten). Some of the Mexican officers resigned rather than officiate at such a "cruel and unmartial" ceremony, but the villainous act was performed under command of Juan de Dios Ortiz. The Texans were required to reach into a jar and draw out a bean, all those drawing black beans being sentenced to be shot. Seventeen drew black beans and were executed while their comrades heard the shots and their groans and cries of death.

Among those drawing white beans were Captain John G. W. Pierson and Henry Woodland, both of whom were later released and came to Falls County to live, Mr. Woodland at Blue Ridge and Mr. Pierson at Marlin.

**MONUMENT AT LA GRANGE.** The bones of the massacred men at Salado Creek and those of the men who died as a result of the Mier expedition, were carried to a point near the spot upon which Captain Nicholas Mosby Dawson recruited his volunteers at the present city of La Grange, Texas, on the Colorado River, and buried there. For a long time the people of Fayette County provided a suitable tomb and memorial for them and in 1936 the State of Texas erected at La Grange a

new memorial tomb and monument in honor of both those who were martyred and those who lived through the battle and prison terms.

The tomb and monument are on a hill, known as Monument Hill, overlooking the city of La Grange, the Colorado River and a scenic view of the river and land for several miles.

**QUOTATIONS FOR HEROES.** Pertinent to the "conquer-or-die" spirit of the men, who took part in the Mier Expedition and the Battle (Massacre) of Salado Creek, the following are quotations inscribed on the tomb of the immortals:

Captain William Mosby Eastland, who drew a black bean: "Thank God! Death has no terrors for me."

Captain Ewen Cameron, executed by order of Santa Anna April 25, 1842: "Cowards die many times before their deaths; the valient never taste death but once."

Dr. Richard Fox Brenham, killed at Salado, Mexico, February 11, 1843: "Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends."

**ON THE TOMB.** The names of eight men who drew black beans (and were executed) are inscribed on the tomb facing the Memorial Monument. On one side of the tomb are inscribed the names of fifteen men, who escaped death at Salado and were held in prison. One of them was Allen H. Morrell, who later lived at Blue Ridge, Falls County. The house in which he lived was re-constructed of the same logs on the grounds of the Old Settlers and Veterans Association Reunion Grounds at Tomlinson Hill.

**NAMES OF MEMORIAL MONUMENT.** The Memorial Monument, twenty feet from the tomb, extends upward forty-eight feet. It was erected at a cost of \$10,400 in 1936 and on it are inscribed the names of heroes of both the Mier Expedition and the Dawson Massacre, indicating those who died in battle, in prison or by execution. Names of two Falls County citizens appear in the list: Allen H. Morrell of Dawson Massacre and Henry Woodland, who took part in the Mier Expedition, drew



a white bean and settled at Blue Ridge near the present (1946) Blue Ridge Church and school and whose descendants live in Falls County.

It is presumed there are relatives of others living in Falls County, because there are many Falls County people with the same names as the men. The list of names (surnames, only) on the Tomb and Memorial shaft are:

#### MEMBERS OF THE MIER EXPEDITION

Ackerman, Alexander, Allen, Alley, Anderson, Armstrong, Arthur, Atwood, Austin, Baker, Barber, Barney, Bassett, Beale, Beard, Beesley, Bell, Bennett, Berry, Bissel, Blackburn, Blanton, Bobo, Bonnell, Boone, Boswell, Bowman, Brenham, Brennan, Brey, Bridger, Bridler, Brown, Brush, Bryan, Buchanan, Buckman, Burras, Burk, Bush, Buster, Callender, Calvert, Cameron, Canfield, Canty, Cash, Censibeu, Chalk, Clark, Clopton, Cocke, Cody, Colville, Copeland, Cox, Crawford, Crittenden, Cronican, Davis, Dillon, Dixon, Donally, Dougherty, Douglass, Downs, Dresser, Dunbar, Dunham, Dusenbury, Eastland, Edwards, Erath, Ernst, Este, Ferman, Fisher, Fitzgerald, Frensky, Gattis, Gibson, Gilpin, Glasscock, Gleason, Goodman, Green, Grosjean, Grubbs, Hackstaff, Hadenburg, Halderman, Hallowell, Hancock, Hanna, Hannon, Harris, Harrison, Harvey, Hasmore, Hays, Henri, Hensley, Hicks, Hill, Hoffer, Holton, Hopson, Hudson, Hughes, Humphries, Hyde, Irvin, Isam, Jackson, Johnson, Jones, Journeay, Kaigler, Kaughman, Keene, Kelley, King, Kuykendall, Lacy, Laforge, Lee, Lehan, Lewis, Livergood, Locherman, Lord, Lucas, Lusk, Lyon, Lyons, Mahan, Maltby, Marlow, Martin, Mathews, Maxwell, Mayes, McAuley, McClelland, McClutchan, McDade, McDonald, McFall, McGinley, McIlrea, McKendall, McLaughlin, McMath, McMicken, McMullen, McQueen, Middleton, Miller, Millon, Mills, Mitchell, Moore, Moorehead, Morgan, H. V. Morrell, Morris, Mosier, Murray, Nealy, Nelson, Oats, Ogden, Oldham, Overton, Owen, Owens, Parker, Peacock, Phelps, Pierce, John G. W. Pierson, Pilant, Pilley, Pitts, Porter, Randolph, Ranson, Reese, Rice, Riley, Roark, Roberts, Rockyfellow, Rogers, Rowan, Runyan, Rupley, Ryon, Saint Clair, Saunders, Scott, Sellers, Sergeant, Shepherd, Shipman, Simonds, Sinnickson, Smith, Stansberry, Stapp, Sullivan, Swearengen, Sweizy, Tanney, Tatom, Thompson, Thurmond, Toops, Torrey, Towers, Trahern, Turnbull, Turner, Ury, Usher, Van Dyke, Van Horn, Van Vetchen, Vaughn, Vincent, Walker, Wallace, Walton, Ward, Warren, Waters, Watkins, Watson, Weeks, West, Whaling, White, Whitehurst, Wilkinson, Williams, Willis, Willoughby, Wilson, Wing, Henry Woodland, Wright, Wyatt, Wynn, Yates, Yocum, Young and Zumwalt.

#### MEMBERS OF CAPTAIN NICHOLAS DAWSON'S COMPANY OF VOLUNTEERS

Adams, Alexander, Alley, Barkley, Beard, Berry, Bradley, Brookfield, Butler, Church, Coltrin, Cummings, Dancer, Captain Dawson, Dickerson, Eastland, Faison, Farris, Fields, Garey, Griffin, Hall, Harrell, Higginson, Hill, James, Jones, Kornegay, Lewis, Lewis, Linn, Lowe, Manton, McGrady, McGee, Miller, Allen H. Morrell, Pendleton, Patterson, Rice, Robinson, Savage, Scallorn, Shaw, Simms, Slack, Trimble, Wells, Woods.

Many of the names listed above represent two to seven men of the same surname, of different given-names, or initials.

**TEXAS JOINS THE U. S.** For ten years (lacking a few days) the people of Texas struggled to establish a stable government, to protect themselves against the Indians and save their country from the Mexican government, which tried to repudiate the Treaty of Velasco and ignore Texas Independence. They were progressing satisfactorily, but within Texas there was a strong sentiment for annexation to the United States. Also, in the United States strong influences worked to bring that about. The problem of annexation was far from easy, however, for in the United States, serious disagreements over the slavery issue brought a great war in 1860-1865, but the issue was only approaching that climax in the 1840s.

A number of outstanding leaders of the United States worked for annexation, including Andrew Jackson, James K. Polk and others. Sam Houston of Texas, too, was accredited with favoring it, but, as president and leader, shrewdly demured, perhaps, to give public sentiment time to develop in favor of it. Details of those fateful events, which led to annexation of Texas to the Union, comprise the history of Texas and the United States. The people of the Falls County area were indirectly involved.

On February 16, 1846, amid the booming of cannon and the mingled smiles and tears of Texas patriots, the flag of the Republic with its single star was lowered, the broad banner of the American Union was unfurled, and President (Anson) Jones declared in tones at once solemn and sad: "The final act of this great drama is now performed; the Republic of Texas is no more!", recorded Newton and Gambrell's "A Social and Political History of Texas." On that day, Texas began service under the fifth flag, having formerly been under flags of Spain, France, Mexico, and the Lone Star flag of the Texas Republic.

**MEXICO ENRAGED.** The Mexican government was enraged at the turn of events and hostilities between Mexico and the United States grew in intensity. Efforts of President James K. Polk of the United States to settle differences peacefully proved futile. General Zachary



Taylor and an American army had been encamped near Corpus Christi and on March 9, 1846, three weeks after Texas was officially annexed, moved across the Nueces toward the Rio Grande, with the purpose of better establishing the claims of the United States to the territory between those rivers. Meanwhile, General Pedro Ampudia (the same Mexican general who was at Mier in 1842), on April 11, 1846, sent a note from Matamoros to General Taylor, demanding his withdrawal across the Nueces within twenty-four hours, otherwise "arms, and arms alone, must decide the question." General Taylor not only refused to withdraw, but ordered a blockade of the mouth of the Rio Grande River. Then—on April 23, 1846, President Paredes of Mexico proclaimed a "defensive war" against the United States had begun.

President Polk, already exasperated over the conduct of the Mexicans, desired an immediate declaration of war, but Secretary of the Navy, Bancroft, thought it best to wait for initiation of war by the Mexicans. It was not long coming. President Polk in Washington received official reports of battles between the Americans and Mexicans at Palo Alto near Brownsville and Resaca de la Palma near Matamoros, both on the Texas side. On May 13, 1846, the president signed a declaration of war with Mexico, both houses of Congress having passed the declaration by large majorities.

**FALLS COUNTY MEN IN U. S.-MEXICAN WAR.** General Zachary Taylor called for four regiments of Texans, two of them mounted and two on foot. In 1843, at Bucksport (near the Falls of the Brazos), Captain J. B. Smith had recruited a company of eighty men from the surrounding country and these men joined Jack Hayes' famous Texas rangers and served throughout the war, Mrs. Lillian Schiller St. Romain quoted on authority in her "A History of Lott and its Community." It was estimated that forty of the men were killed in action, or died of disease in the war. Most of those killed, fell at Palo Alto, Molina del Ray and, especially, at Buena Vista.



A search of Muster Rolls lists in the Land Office at Austin shows personnel of companies of Captain John Smith and Commander J. N. Smith and neither of the lists designate the points from which they were recruited, nor from whence the various men came (lived). One of the companies was recruited in 1837 and date of recruiting the other isn't indicated.

It is known, despite lack of records in the State Capitol (it was explained, the records may be there, but only extensive search would reveal them), Henry Woodland of Blue Ridge, J. C. Gaither, of Chilton and Daniel M. Jackson of Lott served in the United States-Mexican War; also, G. A. King, who came to Marlin after the war Between the States. (Perhaps there were others).

**TEXANS ANSWER THE CALLS.** The first Texas troops to respond to General Taylor's call were under command of Colonel Albert Sidney Johnston, who later was a distinguished general in the War Between the States. Among others to distinguish themselves were Ben McCullough and Edward Burleson, both of whom had fought Indians near, and around, the Falls; Mirabeau B. Lamar, Henry L. Kinney and Edwin Clark. Governor Henderson was granted a leave of absence by the Texas Legislature to command the Texas force—and this he did with the rank of Major General.

**FALLACIOUS MEXICAN PSYCHOLOGY.** Certainly, to Texans the psychology of the Mexicans and their former president, Santa Anna, seemed fallacious and unconscionable. Early Texans never understood it—and, on the other hand, maybe they did, for they went to war over Mexican inconstancy and diabolism. Santa Anna was the "Napoleon of the West," when winning. He was the counterpart in defeat and readily pledged his word of honor to use his influence in establishing Texas Independence. Yet Mexico repudiated the Treaty of Velasco, chose war when Texas was annexed to the United States and the same wily undependable Santa Anna was one of her important generals!

In command of a large Mexican Army, Santa Anna ordered an attack on General Taylor's forces at Buena Vista, February 22, 1847. A fierce and deadly battle raged until twilight of the next day and it might have been fatal to the Americans, had it not been for the brave work of two Texans, Ben McCullough and Captain Buchel, whose scouting expedition had given General Taylor valuable advance information and enabled him to prepare. In the battle, Colonel Jefferson Davis and his Mississippi Rifles won national attention and admiration for valor. Through his cool and skillful management, at a critical point, the Mexican's final attempt to break through the American lines was foiled. Though severely wounded, Colonel Davis stayed in his saddle until the fight was over. Later Jefferson was elected President of the Confederate States of America and was admired and honored by all Southerners.

**U. S.-MEXICAN WAR ENDS.** Troops of the United States invaded Mexico and were at its capital, Mexico City, when the war ended with the signing of the Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, four miles from Mexico City, February 2, 1848. Louis J. Wortham in "A History of Texas" wrote: "Under it (the Treaty), Mexico renounced all claims to Texas and agreed to the Rio Grande as the boundary. For a consideration of fifteen million dollars she also ceded to the United States the vast territory now comprising the states of California, Nevada, Utah, and Arizona, and part of New Mexico, Colorado and Wyoming. Thus had the course of "manifest destiny" continued westward ----." The "manifest destiny," of course, referred to expansion of the United States across the continent—from the Atlantic to the Pacific Ocean.

## CHAPTER VII

### Falls County Created - County Seat Established

**SETTLEMENTS IN 1840'S.** While records of early families and settlements in Falls County area are meager as to detail, some coming in the 1830s and others in the 1840s, a brief outline of settlements from the only records give an idea of the sparsely settled area. As understandable, most of the people preferred to have the river between them and the Indians, who roamed the western plains and, chiefly, up and down the Brazos River. Only a few permanent settlements were made west of the river before the 1850s.

Bucksport early became a supply station and it was related that William R. Howe, who lived on Chambers Creek in 1844, in what is now Ellis County, "had to haul his bread-stuff from the Falls of the Brazos—and so did all—(who came later to the same vicinity)—a distance of eighty miles from Chambers Creek, until he could make a farm."

**FROM AN OLD BOOK.** "Pen Pictures from the Garden of the World" records: "Before the war (War Between the States) A. H. Morrell, son of the well-known Elder Morrell, put up the first store in Marlin on the site of the old Bartlett building (City Hall of 1946) on the northeast corner of the square. At the Falls, old Christopher Stern had a store and on Blue Ridge, near Bartlett (where was Bartlett?—Editor) Mr. Rose had one in the early 50s, and this site became a rival for the new courthouse. Probably a few other stores were started before the war. Afterwards they became more numerous. Stores are generally the beginning of towns and seats of post offices. It has been seen that the only towns before the war were old Viesca in 1834 and to about



1836; Bucksport from about 1838, or 1839, to about 1852; new Viesca, or Fort Milam for a short time during the 1840s; and Marlin in 1851. Reagan arose about the first after the war, as a store, and others will be noted later.

"There was not much in the line of early mills. Probably the first horse mills were those of Bartley and Menefee. (Perhaps, meant for Barclay and Menefee, for the families were related—Editor.) After the war there were better ones at Alexander's, Lang's, Billingsley's and other places."

The same book (published 1892 when, perhaps, its writers were able to confer with those more familiar with the earlier settlers) also recorded, "Bucksport was the first post office in the present bounds of the county (Falls County)."

**NEW SETTLERS ARRIVE.** Since details of early settlements are meager, there is no definite way of knowing the names of the early settlers, nor where they settled, nor from whence they came. It is generally agreed that most of them came from the southern states of the United States, although a few came from more distant places.

After annexation and the United States-Mexico war, Texas was safer, both from Indians and the Mexicans. An influx of people in search of new homes and opportunities followed. There were a number of reasons for this; first, from the earliest days of the Republic of Texas, efforts had been made to encourage settlement of the right kind of people. Texas, rich in land, offered inducements in land grants. In 1839, the Texas Congress had established the "homestead law," which made it illegal for a man's home and implements to be taken to satisfy a debt, or judgment for debt. While there was a lot of confusion in land grants, some frauds and wastefulness, their availability encouraged settlement.

After annexation, the business of defending Texas from the Indians became an obligation of the Federal

government. That duty was not neglected. More than nineteen forts were established in Texas and two to four thousand federal troops placed in them—almost one-third the United States Standing Army. Many thought the federal government was clumsy in dealing with Indian problems (one of whom was Sam Houston), but, all-in-all, Texas was comparatively safe. Other reasons for people seeking new opportunities in Texas were the disturbed political condition in Europe in the 1840s and the after-effects of a financial panic, which swept over the United States, in 1837, both of which were inter-related. People migrated to Texas in search of new opportunities.

A Texas newspaper of 1839, referring to immigration to Texas, published, "Steamboats, ships and wagons came crowded with settlers for the young and growing Republic." (Newton and Gambrell's "A Social and Political History of Texas").

**DEMAND FOR MORE COUNTIES.** With the increased population, a demand for new counties with more conveniently located county seats arose. By 1846, thirty-two new counties were created and, after annexation, the State Legislature was faced with demands for more.

It is necessary at this point to keep in mind that the area in which Falls County is located was originally part of Robertson's Nashville Colony and, prior to the fall of 1835, was known as Viesca Municipality, or District. At the Convention at San Felipe in the fall of 1835, the name was changed to Milam District in honor of Benjamin Rush Milam, who gave his life for Texas in that same year. Milam District eventually became Milam County, and was divided into smaller counties. From the vast original area, comprising Milam County, forty-one counties were created, in whole or part. Some of the counties were created in whole or part, from counties previously created from Milam County and, perhaps,

some of those listed below were created part from other counties and part from Milam, although all of them came (whole or part) from Milam County:

|          |           |              |
|----------|-----------|--------------|
| Bell     | Freestone | Mills        |
| Bosque   | Hamilton  | Navarro      |
| Brazos   | Haskell   | Palo Pinto   |
| Brown    | Hill      | Parker       |
| Burleson | Hood      | Robertson    |
| Burnet   | Johnson   | Shackleford  |
| Callahan | Jones     | Somerville   |
| Comanche | Lampasas  | Stevens      |
| Coryell  | Lee       | Tarrant      |
| Dallas   | Leon      | Throckmorton |
| Eastland | Limestone | Wichita      |
| Ellis    | Madison   | Williamson   |
| Erath    | McLennan  | Young        |
| Falls    | Milam     |              |

**CITIZENS PETITION FOR FALLS COUNTY.** After 1846, the people of Falls area (then, Milam and Limestone counties) thought it time for their county seat to be nearer than Springfield and Cameron, both about forty miles away and difficult to reach with means of transportation of that day. Milam County, created March 17, 1836, while Texas was a Republic, was organized in 1837. Among early counties created from it was Limestone County (about 1846) and, of course, some people of the area around the Falls of the Brazos in 1849 went to Springfield and others to Cameron, whenever they had business with the county seat.

In 1849 two petitions were presented to the State Legislature, asking for creation of a new county with county seat nearer to the people. Both petitions are on file in the State Archives at Austin (Capitol) and there is a similarity between them, indicating they may have been inspired simultaneously. The first, not dated, carries signatures of about ninety petitioners; the other, dated September 30, 1849, carries seventeen signatures and a notation upon it reads, "In addition to the balance of our petition you will receive this—C. H. Stevens."



The following is the wording of the petition not dated, including signatures:

To the Honorable the Senate and House of Representatives of the State of Texas Assembled:

The undersigned citizens of Milam County would represent that we are desirous of a new county created to include the Falls of the Brazos in said Milam County and also a portion of Limestone County, they would respectfully represent that the county prayed for now to be created to include the following limits to-wit:

Beginning at the upper corner of League No. 5 on the west bank of the Brazos River in the name of L. B. Franks; thence crossing the river running N 60 degrees E 14 miles; thence S 30 degrees E to the N W boundary of Robertson County; thence with the N W boundary of Robertson County there with the N. W. boundary of the Brazos River; then across said river and up the bank of the same to the N E corner of League No. 8 in the name of L. Frosts; thence S 60 degrees west to a point bearing S 30 E from the S corner of Milam County; thence 30 degrees W to S corner of McLennan County; thence N 60 degrees E to the beginning; all of which is fully set forth and explained by reference to the plan accompanying this petition and we would state to your Honorable Body that the creation of this county will give much relief to the inhabitants of this section of the county, which will be much benefited by it and we are confident it would be a great public benefit to the citizens generally and we would further suggest to your Honorable Body that it be named Falls County and the county seat be located on the west bank of the Brazos at the Falls of the Brazos and such other; and further relief as your Honorable Body may deem necessary in the premises and as in duty bound will ever pray.

Following names are signed to the petition:

F. A. Hill, H. C. Gregory, Wm. S. Nard, I. B. Riggs, R. P. Clary, Wm. Martin (or Marlin?), J. D. Overton, John Nilson, W. W. Lins, I. B. Roges, W. Norther, I. Willis, Daniel Monroe, John McLennan, J. C. Burris, W. C. Kirk, Henry C. Standefer, Alphens Harlan, J. H. Twinham, Isaac Standefer, H. Puded, Wm. H. Walker, Aaron Roberts, Jonas J. Abray, D. R. Gray, W. H. Arnett, Aaron L. Dove, Squire Blevins, Daniel Alexander, Robert Tucker, Bleraford West, M. D. Aldridge, S. P. Allen, Francis Zellner, Columbus Reed, A. J. Hale, M. West, L. Blevins, R. Boiles, Daniel Cullins, Jose Courpsom, Ben Vanhook, Nathan Halbest, Alpine Cullen, John L. Fikes, L. L. Moore, A. P. Standefer, J. C. Comptone, John Hobson, A. Gallaten, Philip Prater, P. C. Moore, S. T. Bryant, E. Harlan, James Boran, Abraham Yarbrough, James A. Shanks, Prior Kennedy, John S. Blaine, James K. Blain, Francis T. Duffan, D. C. Sallisans, B. F. Rice, Wm. O. Blair, Christopher Gibbins,

I. Wheeler, Wm. R. Roberts, C. Buckholts, F. D. Moreland, Iesi<sup>e</sup> P. Bowles, Aquillar Jones, Abram Moore, Lewis C. Walker, P. D. Smith, W. H. Burn, S. W. Adams, Augusta Evard, M. Moore, Jackson Shober, B. F. Blount, J. W. McCorm, P. R. Fleming, A. Chalmers, W. S. Hubby, John Lawrence, Caleb M. Hubby, Geo. Cathy, William G. Hall.

The petition dated December 1849 is as follows:

To the Honorable

The Senate and House of Representatives:

The undersigned citizens of Milam County would respectfully represent to your Honorable Body that we desire at the present session of the Legislature a formation of a new county to include the following boundaries to-wit:

Beginning at the upper corner of League No. 5 on the west bank of the Brazos which is the upper line of L. B. Franks League above the falls of the Brazos River about 17 miles; Thence N 60 degrees E 14 miles from the river; thence S 30 degrees E to the north west boundary line of Robertson County; thence with N W boundary line of Robertson County and the Brazos River (the territory included within these limits east of the Brazos now belonging to Limestone County); thence across said river and up the W bank of the same to the N E corner of League No. 8 in the name of S. Frost; thence S 60 degrees west to a point bearing S 30 degrees E from the south corner of McLennan County; thence N 60 degrees E to the place of beginning; which is better defined or explained by reference to the map or sketch accompanying this petition.

This territory is now remote from any county seat and the inhabitants are put to great inconveniences; besides we consider it will be a great public interest to have the above contemplated county created at this session; to be named Falls County; and the county seat be at the Falls on the west bank of said river Brazos to be called Manchester. We the citizens of Milam County, as in duty bound, will ever pray, etc.

December 30, 1849.

The following names were signed to the petition: B. Bryant, Jesie Bryant, B. S. Bryant, G. P. Chyman, J. M. Glenn, Allen Bryan, John Dunlap, James N. Thorp, Sam Anderson, Alex Glenn, Hiram Hays, John Easley, David Curry, Joseph Daniels, Jackson T. Blankenship, Jonathan Williams.

In addition to the balance of our petition you will receive this.

C. H. Stevens

There is no definite proof that the names appearing on the above mentioned petitions are those of people liv-

ing in the Falls area, although the reference, "The inhabitants of this section of the county will be benefitted," etc., indicates they DID live in the area.

**ACT CREATING FALLS COUNTY.** Apparently the petitions received the support of the State Legislature, for on January 28, 1850, an Act Creating Falls County was passed, reading as follows, according to Volume III, Gammel's Laws of Texas:

Section—1. Be it enacted by the Legislature of the State of Texas, That the territory contained with the following limits: Beginning at the upper corner of League Number Five, on the west bank of the Brazos River in the name of L. B. Franks; thence north sixty degrees east, fourteen miles; thence south thirty degrees east to the northwest boundary of Robertson County; thence along said boundary line to the Brazos River and across the same; thence up the west bank of said river to the northeast corner of League Number Eight in the name of S. Frost; thence south sixty degrees west to a point from which the south corner of McLennan County, bears north thirty degrees west to the place of beginning shall constitute a new county, and be called Falls County.

Section 2. Be it further enacted, That the old municipal town of Viesca at the falls of the Brazos shall be the County seat of said county until otherwise provided by law.

Section 3. Be it further enacted, That the citizens of Falls County are entitled to the rights, privileges, officers, and courts, to which other counties, in similar circumstances, are entitled.

Section 4. Be it further enacted, That Falls County shall be organized by the proper authorities of Milam County, according to the provisions of an act entitled an Act to Provide for the Organization of New Counties, approved March 20, 1848.

Section 5. Be it further enacted, That this act shall take effect and be in force from and after its passage.

Especially interested in creation of the new county from Limestone and Milam counties were J. Davis of Springfield and Isaac Parker, "Pen Pictures from the Garden of the World," recorded, but the book did not record whether they were private citizens, or members of the Legislature.

According to available information, the Legislature considered the wishes of the people, the valuable services rendered by the people at the Falls (defending the frontiers, driving out Indians and fighting for Texas Independence) and laid off a county, with the Falls as the center, called it Falls County and designated Viesca as the county seat.



**CREATION OF THE COUNTY DELAYED.** Although the Act was passed January 28, 1850, it was sometime before definite action toward organization was taken. Early records are meager and organization assigned to the Milam County Court, is not indicated, for Milam County lost some of its Court records in a fire of the 1870s.

It is known that the proceedings were not satisfactory to people living east of the river, particularly those of the Blue Ridge area. They felt that the county seat should be on the east, nearer to where most of the people lived. (In 1850, only a few, if any, families were permanently settled west of the river. Although the Bird Creek fight had been fought in May, 1839, the area was still considered unsafe, because of Indians). It was August 5, 1850, before the county was organized and details of organization are lacking.

State Archives show that an election of officers for Falls County was held August 5, 1850, but no other information about the election is on file, Miss Harriet Smither, archivist in charge, said.

**EARLY OFFICERS.** It is shown that Charles Smith was elected Chief Justice; C. S. Dobbs, G. W. Morgan and Shadrock Maness, commissioners; John W. Jarvis, Sheriff; and L. B. Barton, County Clerk. Book A of the Falls County Commissioners Court records shows a number of other officers and dates of their taking the oath of office; David Barton, Justice of Peace, September 26, 1850; Allensworth Adams, Justice of Peace, March 11, 1851. It is shown that Thomas C. Jarvis was elected District Clerk January 21, 1851; F. I. Barton, Assessor and Collector, January 21, 1851; and Samuel A. Blain County Treasurer. After February 1851, the minutes indicate officers elected and those who served—until 1858. Some of the minutes of the Falls County Commissioners Court were lost in the fire which destroyed the court house in the 1870s.

**COUNTY SEAT SELECTED BY VOTE.** Presumably, the people living on the east side of the river considered the Act (creating Falls County), including problems in their

relation to their desires and, in the end, petitioned for an election in which people might choose for themselves, location of the county seat. Meanwhile, the duly elected officers including the Commissioners Court, went into office. Immediately, the movement got under way for selection of a county seat by vote.

**FIRST COMMISSIONERS COURT MEETING.** If there were previous meetings of the Commissioners Court, formal or otherwise, before February 24, 1851, no record could be found. In Book A, in the handwriting of L. B. Barton, county clerk, include these lines:

## STATE OF TEXAS COUNTY OF FALLS

Be it remembered that on the twenty-fourth day of February in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and fifty one, the Honorable County Court was held at the place appointed for that purpose for transacting any business that should come before the court of

C. L. Dobbs

G. W. Morgan

Commissioners

J. W. Jarvis, Sheriff and

David Barton, Justice of the Peace

L. B. Barton, County Clerk.

The court proceeded to draw the following jurors for the spring term of the District Court to be held on the third Monday in March: Jeremiah McDaniel, Luke Church, Alexander Hodge, George Roberson, L. H. Barton, Isaac H. Crouch, David Rice, Allen Manes, De Michael, D. Castleman, Lewis Powers, John Hodge, David Barkley (perhaps, David Barclay—Editor), P. C. Whitaker, Albert G. G. Gholston, James Marlin, Wilburn Jones, Charles Duncan, Franklin Powers, Larkin Rogers, Kipee Irvin, Bennett Irvin, Willibe Sparks, F. W. Capps, ----- Smith, Green B. Duncan, William Hodge, ---- Honeycutt, Stephen Adkins, John Q. Capps,

Rufus A. Marlin, William I. Morgan, Carroll Powers, William Crouch, James Wimberly, Morris Adkins, John Mitchell, Alonzo Croatch.

It was ordered that an "election be held at the several precincts in the county for the purpose of electing officers to fill vacancies in the county that are required, on the 13th day of March, 1851, and also ordered by the Court that the court house should be let out on the 15th day of March, next, to the lowest bidder, ---"

L. B. Barton  
County Clerk

(While the records do not show the Commissioners built a courthouse as early as 1851, the words, "and also ordered by the Court that the courthouse should be let out on the 15th day of March, next, to the lowest bidder," may indicate plans for building one. There is no proof a court house was built before 1855. See chapter on court houses.)

**"ADAMS" CHOSEN COUNTY SEAT.** "Book A" of the Commissioners Court Minutes show the results of the election (date not indicated), one of special significance being that "Adams" was chosen the county seat by a vote of 20 votes. "Adams" was an unanimous choice, since no other place was recorded as receiving votes.

"Adams" signified the spot, where Marlin is located, and according to the best information, designated a place near the home of Dr. Allensworth Adams and Adams Spring. The Adams home was on ground where now (1946) is the home of Mrs. Nettie Allen, 305 Ward Street—a few hundred yards north of the courthouse square.

**OTHER EARLY OFFICERS OF THE COUNTY.** Some of the other early officers were: F. Barnes, Tax Assessor and Collector; William Newton, District Clerk; Larkin Rogers, A. G. Gholston and F. I. Barton, Justices of the Peace; G. W. Broadwell, Coroner; John Mitchell, Constable.



Election clerks for this first election (March 13, 1851) were indicated as follows: David Barton, presiding officer, L. B. Barton, and J. W. Jarvis. Judges were A. L. Marlin and F. W. Capps. The notation concerning the election and results thereof, were signed by Charles Smith, Chief Justice, and attested by L. B. Barton, County Clerk.

**"ADAMS" CHANGED TO "MARLIN."** The Commissioners Court met March 22, 1851, with the following personnel, Charles Smith, Chief Justice; C. L. Dobbs, G. W. Morgan and James Wimberly, commissioners.

Problems of taxation were considered, after which H. B. Coleman, A. G. Gholston and Grandville Rose were appointed "to review a road leading to Springfield ---." The business of providing funds for the new county's business, building roads, in order that its citizens could travel, and other business, began—and continued—in the past and present.

An order of significant note was, "Be it further ordered that the town of Marlin be the place of holding court in and for the county of Falls until otherwise directed by law; also, all other county courts shall be held in the town of Marlin."

"Adams" had been the name of the county seat. People had simply designated "Adams"—near the home of Dr. Adams—when they voted. It is known that the name, "Marlin," was given in memory of the Marlin family, members of which died at the hand of the Indians at the George Morgan home, January 1, 1839, and others maintained "Fort Marlin" and helped drive away seventy Indians attacking the fort January 10, 1839, though outnumbered more than fifteen to one.

**NAME CHOSEN BY THE LEGISLATURE.** The Commissioners Court records do not explain why the name was changed from Adams to Marlin. A few years ago George H. Carter, Marlin attorney, through research in the laws of the Third Legislature, presented a copy of the final

Act creating Falls County, approved September 4, 1850. The original Act, January 28, 1850, designated Viesca as the County seat; the final act, designated Marlin. The final act contains the following:

An Act to Authorize the People of Falls County  
To Locate the County Seat of Falls County

Section 1. Be it enacted by the Legislature of the State of Texas, that it shall be the duty of the Chief Justice of Falls County and he is hereby required to order an election to be held at each of the several precincts in said county on the first Monday in November, next, by the qualified electors of said county, for the purpose of selecting a seat of justice for said county.

Section 2. That it shall be the duty of said Chief Justice to advertise said election in each election precinct of the said County for ten days next preceding the date thereon for holding such election specifying distinctly in said advertisement or notice, the purpose for which said election is to be held.

Section 3. That the place receiving the majority of all the votes polled, shall be the site of justice for said County of Falls and shall be called Marlin, until otherwise provided by law; and that all laws and parts of laws conflicting with the terms of this act be, and the same are hereby repealed; and that this act take effect and be in force from and after its passage.

APPROVED September 4, 1850

By reading Section 3 of this Act, it is seen the county seat was named by the State Legislature.

**SIZE OF COUNTY CHANGED?** For a long time a popular understanding has existed that, when "Adams" was selected county seat (its name was later changed to "Marlin") it was not in the geographical center of the county. It was record that way in "Pen Pictures from the Garden of the World — McLennan, Falls, Bell and Coryell Counties," which also recorded that the "accommodating Legislature" cut off five miles along the Falls-Bell County line, in order that it would be in the center. Perhaps, a survey of the original field notes, in comparison with the county's present boundaries, would reveal the facts. On the other hand, since a Falls County court house, a Milam County court house and a State Capitol burned in the 1870s, the original field notes may be lost.

Minutes of Falls County Commissioners Court proceedings (the first dated February 24, 1851) do not mention any change in the boundaries. According to Gam-

mel's Laws of the State of Texas, the following act was passed by the Legislature in 1856:

**An Act attaching a portion of Falls County,  
including Elm Creek, to Bell County**

Section 1: Be it enacted by the Legislature of the State of Texas, That a strip of territory six miles wide on the southwest side of Falls County, adjoining Bell County, including Elm Creek, be, and the same is hereby attached to and made a part of Bell County for all county purposes.

Section 2: That it shall be the duty of the County Court of Bell County to cause the lines of said county to be run and marked as established by this act, after giving notice of the time and place, twenty days previously thereto, to the Chief Justice of Falls County. And that this act take effect and be in force after its passage.

A study of the Commissioners Court minutes of Bell County may offer light, but it is not deemed necessary here. The act was passed six years after Falls County was created and may have been passed to establish legality of boundaries, recognized at that time. It IS evidence that the size of the county WAS reduced. Mrs. W. E. (Mary Towers) Crocker, long time associated with an abstract company, made a hurried examination of the Act of 1850 (creating Falls County) and the present boundary and expressed the opinion that the County's size has been decreased. County Surveyor W. W. Hunicutt said he knew of no records proving changes of the boundary. (Of course, the original field notes may have been destroyed, or lost.)

**"FALLS COUNTY" GROWS.** A new county, Falls County, had been born, its boundaries fixed and its county seat selected. It was the task of its citizens to carve out its career under the laws of Texas and the United States. How well it was done, and is being done, is the pride of its citizenship. Though small in area, the county ranks among the productive counties of the State. It possesses all modern developments for building good homes and citizenship and its people rank with the nation's best.

**COURT HOUSE SQUARE CREATED.** By May 5, 1851, the Commissioners saw the wisdom of the county possessing a dignified place of business and ordered: "the Square (courthouse square) shall be One Hundred Twenty



Yards Square, said tracts (streets) to be sixty feet wide, running north and south, east and west ---." (Streets in 1946, appeared wider, because the county, to provide more hitching and parking space around the square, set its fence, and subsequently the curb, back several feet. While the streets around the square are approximately ninety feet wide, part of their area continues to be the property of the county, according to the records.)

**PLANS FOR A CITY.** At the same meeting of the Commissioners Court (May 5, 1851), was: "An order made by the Court that A. H. Morrell is appointed to advertise and proceed to sell, in the town, lots in accordance to the acts of the laws of the town, in the State of Texas; that said lots are to be made in three parts; One-third down, one-third in six months and the other in twelve months from the date of the sale; the said land to stand for the amount that it was sold for; more, on the purchaser failing to comply and pay according to his note, he will forfeit his contract and the land shall fall back to the county; from selling any lot that may, in the opinion of the said Chief Justice, if to be the interest of said county, shall not be sold; the Court had appointed S. A. Blain to run off all the town lots in such lots as he may deem proper." Members of the Court were Charles Smith, Chief Justice; James Wimberly, Chesley S. Dobbs, and G. W. Morgan, commissioners.

Mr. Morrell, son of the Reverend Z. N. Morrell, had been made prisoner in the Dawson's Massacre of 1842, and had returned to Falls County to live, after serving time at Perote, Mexico. He was credited with owning one of the first (if not the first) stores in what became "Adams," then Marlin. His store was in the "Bartlett Building," at the location of Marlin's City Hall in 1946.

The minutes also show that S. A. Blain was "appointed to run off all town lots ---." As a result, he designed the early plan of lots and streets of Marlin and made a map. Later, at the direction of the Court, he surveyed certain boundaries of the county.

Mrs. W. E. (Mary Towers) Crocker, with an abstract firm in Marlin, said the "Blain Map" of the county seat was probably made by Samuel A. Blain, because "May 5, 1851, the Court appointed S. A. Blain to run off all town lots ---."

Minutes of February 20, 1855, state that "it is ordered by the Court that F. McKeig be allowed five dollars for making a map of the town, made by the order of the late C. Smith, Chief Justice for which script may issue." On May 17, 1857, the following order was entered in the minutes, "It is ordered by the court that Jos. Stansbury be and he is hereby authorized to transcribe and make out a map of the town of Marlin, the same to be made out on good strong substantial paper and shall be placed in a wood frame and hung in the office of the County Clerk, and shall not, in any case, be allowed to be taken therefrom."

"No traces of said maps, as authorized, are now in existence," Mrs. Crocker continued, "and it is probable that what is known as the 'Blain Map' was one of the two maps referred to. The Blain Map showed the public square and the streets running east and west and north and south on each side thereof, as far as the original boundaries of the town's 640 acres town tract. It also showed the blocks facing on the square and those on the four corners of the square cut into lots. The outlying blocks were designated as outlots and were not subdivided into lots. All the streets shown on said map, except the four principal streets, were very narrow and are referred to in the deed records as alleys.

"The last known copy of the Blain Map was at one time in possession of Captain J. A. Martin (who lived in Marlin, after he helped survey and build the Bremond-Waco extension of the railroad), and this came into the hands of the Falls County Abstract Company, when the abstract plant of Captain Martin was purchased by that company. The Blain Map was used in the trial of a case of Spencer versus Levy about 1914 and was lost, or misplaced, at that time."

**PLACE OF DISTRICT COURT ESTABLISHED.** It is recorded in the minutes of the Commissioners Court, dated May 5, 1851, that "this place, to-wit the town of Marlin, be the place of holding said Court (District Court) in and for Falls County." It was simply a routine order, but it established the place of District Court for the new county.

**COUNTY'S BUSINESS ESTABLISHED.** Within a few weeks, the business of the County was in order, officers were selected according to law and the county settled down to an era of progress. Since the Commissioners Court and its members are executors of the people's mandates, and of the laws governing counties, the minutes catalogue many details of the county's life and progress. The details are inappropriate here. Summed up, early Courts managed the county's business according to popular demand and law, appointed men to "survey" roads (to report needs for and feasibilities of new ones) and, with the assistance of the citizens, provided them; they appointed patrols, whose duties were special and, particularly, pertained to the relationship between slave and slave-owner. The patrols ("pateroles") sought out and returned to their owners runaway slaves. They performed other special services. The Court provided for maintenance of roads and all public property, created special laws for their preservation and use, and performed other duties, as required by law.

A. H. Morrell, apparently, was successful selling town lots and developing the county seat. The town grew. For part-payment for his services, Mr. Morrell received Lot Number 1 for his own. (Probably designated on the Blain Map).

**TITLE OF TOWN'S LAND UNSTABLE.** In August, 1851, the Commissioners Court was cognizant of conflicting claims relating to the land upon which the new county seat was located. It instituted moves to clear titles not only for the county's home (the Square) but for citizens within the county seat, and around about.



As heretofore referred to, in the early 1830s, before Texas acquired its independence, General Thomas J. Chambers received a grant of land in payment of services as judge of a Judicial District in the Mexican State of Coahuila and Texas. Another grant was issued to a Mexican, La Serda, and the grant of Chambers and La Serda overlapped, creating conflicting claims.

In August, 1851, the Court ordered "that A. H. Morrell shall under the instructions of the Chief Justice (Charles Smith) make a quit claim to title to any amount of four leagues donated by the government of Mexico on the west side of the river at the Falls (of the Brazos) for and in consideration of six hundred and forty acres; when General Chambers makes this county a warranty title to said six hundred and forty acres; also ordered that A. H. Morrell, agent for the county, should be made a party to the suit under the instructions of the Chief Justice and counsel of General Chambers; also that General Chambers should have the privilege of selecting two to three lots anywhere in the town of Marlin that has not been sold ---"

Evidently, this plan of the Court and others did not work, for title to the townsite remained under conflicting claims for some time. On April 9, 1853, John G. W. Pierson was appointed "to negotiate with (the same) General T. J. Chambers for the town tract of Marlin ---." It was recorded as follows: "Resolved that John W. Pierson be and he is hereby constituted agent and attorney in fact for the County of Falls with authority to procure from General T. J. Chambers a title to the town tract of Marlin and that he is hereby fully authorized and empowered to convey to said T. J. Chambers such an interest as he may think proper in any lands belonging to said County of Falls or the said town of Marlin, lying on the west side of the Brazos River by virtue of any grant or grants of the government of Coahuila and Texas to the old municipality of Milam or Viesca and that all the acts of our said agent within the scope of his author-

ity herein presented and hereby fully certified and confined—also Court will stop selling any of the town lots of Marlin yet belonging to the Court.”

Charles Smith's name appears as Chief Justice when these minutes were recorded and commissioners were F. W. Capps and David Barclay.

It is impractical to ascertain details of the proceedings relating to the clearing of the title. Mr. Pierson was given full power to adjust the claims. Perhaps, he was unable to find General Chambers, because in May of the same year, 1853, the Court ordered “that there shall be advertised in some newspaper published in Texas, requesting General Chambers to make title to six hundred and forty acres of land where the town of Marlin now is and requesting Chambers to make a title and the same shall be paid out of the County Treasury; whereas John W. Pierson is requested to have the same communication made by advertisement.”

That the conflicting claims were ultimately adjusted is indicated in a notation in the Court minutes dated February 18, 1856, which ordered “that the Chief Justice be authorized to convey unto T. J. Chambers six hundred and forty acres of land, conveyed to the town of Viesca --- in consideration that the said Chambers convey unto the County of Falls his title and interest in and to six hundred and forty acres in the town tract of the town of Marlin.”

Eventually, of course, all claims were adjusted by legal processes and an exchange of property—not only for the county seat site, but for other land within the conflicting grants.

**LOTS FOR CHURCHES.** In August, 1851, in the interest of the advancement of Falls County, three lots were donated by the Commissioners Court for the establishment of churches. The Minutes of the Court reads, “--- there should be one lot donated for a Baptist Church, and Z. N. Morrell is requested to chose or select said lot out of any said lots that have not been disposed of; also, one lot for the Presbyterian Church and Larkin

Rogers is requested to select it; and one for the Methodist, to be chosen by F. W. Capps."

As already written in the chapter dealing with the Reverend Mr. Morrell's experiences in the Falls County area, Mr. Morrell selected the lot on the southeast corner of Ward and Church streets for the church he organized the following year. Mr. Rogers selected for the Presbyterians the lot and the northeast corner of Fortune and Perry street; and Judge Capps selected for the Methodists the lot on the northeast corner of Williams and Fannin Streets. (In more recent years, these churches were rebuilt in other sections of the city).

**QUARTERS FOR THE ERRANT.** Falls County people pride themselves upon being law-abiding citizens, but, according to Divine prophecy, there are those who run afoul the laws of man and the Divine. In February, 1852, the Commissioners got around to having built a log jail. The records describe it as "a house 14 x 16 feet in the clear, built of logs to be edged so that they will fit down. It is to be a double wall of post oak timber and 8 inch space filled with rocks, said house to be floored with a double layer of logs, one layer crossways to the other --- and is to be two stories high --- second floor is to be one layer of logs and third (ceiling) likewise. There will be but one wall (thick) on the second floor. The wall is to be 9 feet from the lower floor to the second floor and 7 feet to the ceiling on the second floor ---"

The jail was built at a cost of \$1,145.00 by F. W. Capps.

Where was it located? According to George H. Carter and the late Zenas Bartlett, long-time residents, it was built a block north of the court house square at the corner of Craik and Newton Streets, and around it was a rather large open space. Popularly, the jail was known to have been there.

The log jail was improved in 1874, under supervision of Zenas Bartlett, S. G. Scroggins and B. W. Rimes. It served until about 1880, when another and more modern



one was built at a cost of \$12,500.00, the minutes show. The new one was built by Edward Northcraft of brick and, before accepted, was "measured and checked for workmanship" by G. W. White, A. L. Branson. Mr. Branson was a successful brick manufacturer in Marlin (also for years afterwards) and, according to the best information, made the bricks for the jail. The old log jail was purchased by County Judge E. C. Stuart.

Before the jail of 1880 was built, however, its location at the corner of Craik and Newton Streets (site of the old jail) was protested by a number of citizens in the growing town and, as a result, the jail was built in the center of the west side of the courthouse square—where the jail of 1946 was located.

In 1915, the 1880 brick story-and-a-half jail was replaced by the 1946 two-storey one, under the direction of the Commissioners Court, personnel of which was F. S. Heffner, county judge; J. E. Vann, W. N. Moore, D. D. Tindle and J. B. Landrum, commissioners. The jail of 1915, improvements and additions to the old one, cost \$25,000.00 and was built by the McKenzie Construction Company. An iron fence, which enclosed the previous jail, was sold to F. E. Hailey, at that time engaged in the lumber and building supplies business.

**COMMISSIONERS COURT RECORDS.** Minutes of the Commissioners Court proceedings offered one source of information for the history of Falls County. Particularly from the record were derived facts for summaries of how the County sustained travel across the capricious Brazos River, and how it built its courthouses, which appear elsewhere in this volume under titles: "Los Brazos de Dios" and "Narrative of Falls County Court Houses."

## CHAPTER VIII

### Under the Confederacy

By Frank Calvert Oltorf

**EVIDENCE OF THE COUNTY'S GROWTH.** The growth of the county in the decade following its creation was indicated by the increase of population, estimated at less than 1,000 in 1855 and the government census showing nearly 3,700 in 1860—and people continued to settle. A study of the Falls County Deed Records and of the lists of men called for jury service, also, revealed an increase. Indicative is an old account book, used by William B. McAllister of Blue Ridge, blacksmith (when blacksmithing was a leading industry in the 1850s), the book now in possession of a son, R. A. McAllister of Odds. Also, in May, 1912, according to the minutes of the Old Settlers and Veterans Association, a "report of Jesse Asbury on the early settlement of the county" indicated the following families and dates of their arrival: Jesse McNeely, William Drury, John Edwards, James Gholston, R. L. Gott, J. W. Greer, James W. Estes and C. M. Moore, in 1854; Richard Asbury, Alf Cullins, C. F. Brown, James F. Miller, Louis Walker and J. H. and T. G. Stillwell, in 1855; Mrs. Aycock in 1856; James and Thomas Jones in 1857; John Young, J. H. Robinson (probably, Robertson), E. M. Wilder and Reverend Melton in 1858.

Among the settlers of this decade (1850-60) settlement of two families were of importance to Falls County, the Churchill Jones family and the Benjamin G. Shields family.

In 1850 Churchill Jones, a Virginian, acquired 28,000 acres of land on the Brazos river in the vicinity of the falls. A son, James Jones, and a nephew, Austin Robinson, managed the farm for over two years, until Mr. Jones, his wife, eight children and about eighty slaves

arrived in 1853. Mr. Jones built a home at Rush Springs, name of which was later changed to Jones Springs. Not far from his home were huts of about eighty slaves. (In 1852 Churchill Jones rendered eighty-one slaves for taxation and his 28,000 acres of land for \$1 an acre, according to Mrs. Lillian Schiller St. Romain, who examined Falls County Tax Rolls in the office of the State Comptroller at Austin.) Site of the Jones home was about three miles east of the present town of Lott. It is estimated that more than five hundred direct descendants of Churchill Jones live in Falls County in 1946.

Another early settler, Benjamin G. Shields, arrived from Alabama (he went to Alabama from South Carolina), where he had been a U. S. Congressman from Alabama. Also, he had served as U. S. Charge d'Affairs at Caracas, Venezuela, where he had observed and studied the "salutary effects of the abolition of slavery and became convinced" that "slavery was not only wrong from a moral standpoint, but a curse and blight upon the section that maintained it."

General Shields (his title was honorary) built his home near Deer Creek a few miles north of the present town of Lott, where he owned a rather large plantation. Later, he opposed Secession, expressed himself openly against it and became unpopular, although his son, who became old enough at the time of the War Between the States, fought in it and died of yellow fever while in the service.

Other records reveal names of settlers in the 1850s, such as minutes of early churches, lodges, farm organizations and, even, temperance societies. As in Texas, as a whole, Falls County's population increased steadily. It was a continuation of the increase which brought about creation of the county (1850).

**CATTLE INDUSTRY INCREASES.** The decade of the 1850s, also, proved the importance of the cattle industry to the county. The river, numerous streams and springs afforded an abundance of water and the fertile prairies



and grazing areas were ideal for raising and selling cattle, Mrs. Lillian Schiller St. Romain wrote in her "A History of Lott and Its Vicinity." The 1906 Texas Almanac stated that "the decade of 1850 saw the cattle industry receiving stimulus. --- The main Texas market was at New Orleans," and Myrtle Murray's "Home Life on Early Ranches of Southwest Texas" recorded "other markets were at Shreveport and Alexandria." The 1858 Texas Almanac recorded that "the annual increase in cattle (in Texas) was thirty to thirty three and one-third percent," and "in Connecticut it cost \$25 to raise a cow; \$15 in Indiana; \$2.50 in Illinois; and in Texas, it cost to raise a cow about what it does a chicken, so plentiful was the free range and so little the trouble was there in looking after cattle."

**SLAVES IN THE COUNTY.** Mrs. St. Romain's examination of the Falls County tax records in the State Comptroller's office in Austin revealed that in 1852 there were 279 slaves in Falls County rendered for taxation, valued at \$172,525 (about \$61.50 each). In 1854, the number had increased to 647, valued at \$335,300 (about \$51.80 each). "Slaves were the most valuable to the settlers; cattle were next," she wrote. "The number of slaves increased each year, until 1861, when 1,654 negroes in Falls County were assessed at \$987,980 (about \$59.75 each). Refugees came through the county, too, with little more than their slaves, stopping to canvass the advisability of staying or going on to Mexico."

It is widely believed the slaves were valued far higher than the tax rolls indicate. The general opinion, based upon Confederate veterans' views of other days, is that slaves were valued at from \$300 to \$900, depending upon their age, sex, health and ability.

**PEOPLE FELT THAT OWNING SLAVES WAS RIGHT.** Differences over the slavery question had been one of the handicaps to annexation of Texas to the United States. Those differences continued and, during the late 1850s, approached a climax. Most people of Falls County felt they had rights under the Constitution to own slaves. But

in other states, strong leaders and majorities felt that slavery was morally unsound and would not build a sturdy and independent nation. Even in Falls County, a few opposed the institution of slavery and, dogmatically, secession.

With the increase of agitation for abolition of slavery, General Benjamin G. Shields, citizen since 1851, living near the present town of Lott, considered slavery, as an institution, "more blighting than beneficial." At one time Charge d'Affairs for the United States in Venezuela (1840) he had observed and studied the "salutary effects of the abolition of slavery" and became convinced "slavery was not only wrong from a moral standpoint, but a curse and a blight on the section that maintained it." When the slavery issue was approaching a climax in Falls County, General Shields was one of the few to express himself candidly—pleading for calmness and preservation of the Union. As a result, he became unpopular, as did others who were adverse to the overwhelming majority who favored slavery.

**HOUSTON OPPOSES SECESSION.** Late in 1859, following the famous John Brown's raid on Harper's Ferry, rabid pro-slavery leaders in Texas were active and elected Louis T. Wigfall, rabid states-right champion, to the United States Senate. State newspapers and political leaders openly advocated secession as the only means of protecting the South and its interests. Slaves were needed in Texas, of course, for clearing land, producing cotton and performing other essential labor.

Abraham Lincoln was elected President in 1860, as a result of the anti-slavery and preservation-of-the-Union crisis. Early in 1861, about the time he was inaugurated, Georgia, Alabama, Florida and Mississippi seceded from the Union, South Carolina, having seceded in December of the previous year. Other Southern States followed.

Petitions asked Governor Sam Houston to call the Legislature in order to provide for a convention, to which

representatives of each legislative district of Texas could be sent with a view of considering secession. Houston knew this would be the first step toward secession and, being opposed to it, refused. Pleading for moderation and intimating the entire proposal would be unconstitutional, he stood firm, but a committee headed by Justice O. M. Roberts of the Supreme Court and the Attorney General requested the people to send delegates anyway. The Convention met in Austin in late January, 1861.

A few days before the convention met, Governor Houston, still firm in his convictions, but realizing the great majority of Texans favored secession, convened the Legislature. He counseled moderation and with impassioned words insisted the rights of Texas could be maintained under the Union and intimated the proposed convention was illegal. In spite of his pleas and personal popularity, the Legislature, by a two-thirds vote, recognized the authority and legality of the convention, but instructed it to submit the question of secession to a vote of the people.

**SECESSION ADOPTED.** The convention met on schedule and finished its work rapidly. In the presence of the governor, lieutenant governor and Justices of the Supreme Court, it adopted an ordinance of secession by a vote of 166 to 7. It also set forth its reasons "which impelled Texas to secede," all of which are recorded in Texas and national history. The election, at which the people would vote on the question, was set for February 23, 1861.

**FALLS COUNTY IN THE CONFEDERACY.** Feelings were high in Falls County during the discussions and decisions on secession. Mass meetings were held in which speakers appealed for support of movement and condemned political trends considered adverse to the rights of the South under the Constitution. Few were bold enough to express themselves strongly against the secession, as did Benjamin G. Shields.



**SAM HOUSTON IN THE COUNTY.** In the year 1861, a dusty carriage stopped in the town of Marlin, and a tall, travel-stained man stepped out. His grave face and fine



SAM HOUSTON HOUSE  
Alto Springs, Falls County

steady eyes showed pain and consternation. He had been stoned in the town of Waco, and once again his blood had watered the soil of Texas. Sam Houston had come to Marlin to fight once more for the Union.

Citizens of Falls County gathered on the Courthouse

Square to hear the General speak. He pleaded with the people to stay with the Federal Union, which Andrew Jackson had said "must and will be preserved." Lawyer Stewart thundered abuse at "this old man who would mislead his people." Others spoke, and long debates were held.

General Houston retired to the home of Zenas Bartlett to rest and refresh himself. He held young Susan Green on his broad knee and carved her a cradle from an acorn from the towering Bartlett oak to rest his troubled mind.

At twilight, he rode to the home of Judge James D. Oltorf, where a large barbecue was held for all the county in his honor. Little Moore, other little slave boys, and town dogs ran behind his carriage. The General was treated with courtesy, talked with all the guests, but left at midnight with a sad heart. Falls County, too, would go against the Union.

(It is known that Sam Houston spoke in Falls County, one time at Alto Springs, early bathing center and health resort, and another, at Marlin. The late Nelson Denson, former slave, was under the impression Houston spoke to

a large gathering on the edge of Bean's Hill, south of Bridge Street, a few yards east of the present [1946] entrance to Marlin Municipal Park. John R. Allen, long time resident of Alto Springs community said he is positive Houston spoke at Alto Springs, "because so many of the early settlers told me about it." Houston stayed overnight at Alto Springs at a stagecoach inn. The house is still standing [1946] and known as "Sam Houston House." People of Alto Springs have instituted plans to preserve it for posterity.—Editor.)

**COUNTY VOTES FOR SECESSION.** Despite the influence and personal popularity of Sam Houston, there was a wave of enthusiasm for secession. Mass meetings were held at which such speakers as Captain John Aycock, Captain Willis L. Lang and others stirred the people of Falls County to action. At the election, February 23, 1861, the county cast most of its 389 votes for secession. In Texas the vote for 44,317 for secession and 13,020 against it.

The convention re-assembled in Austin, March 2, canvassed the returns and by a vote of 109 to 2 declared Texas united with the Confederate States of America. Texans began their service under the Sixth Flag.

**RECRUITING FOR WAR.** "Pen Pictures from the Garden of the World," recorded that the white population of Falls County in 1858 was 1,043. (The census showed the population was 3,614 in 1860.) The slavery issue had brought others into the county, seeking opportunities removed from the anti-slavery areas of the north and east. In 1859, the white population had increased to 2,875 and the county's voting strength was 389. There were 1,225 slaves in the county and 9 free Negroes. The actual fighting strength was estimated at not less than 600, the book recorded.

Recruiting began with Captain Willis L. Lang's Company. Captain Lang had spoken for the Confederate Cause. A company, in his command became Company

B in Green's Regiment of Sibley's Brigade. It went to Arizona, thence to Louisiana, where it engaged the enemy.

Captain Thomas P. Hightower recruited a company of Falls County men, which went to Louisiana and sustained heavy losses in battle, estimated at two-thirds of its personnel. Green's Regiment got another company from Falls County, recruited by Captain John Aycock; and a fourth company was mustered in by Dr. D. G. Adams of Marlin. Many others went from the county for service in various companies and divisions of the Confederate armies and numbers went back to the States from whence they came to enlist there. Some young men individually joined the legendary Terry's Texas Rangers, Hood's Texas Brigade, and other organizations. It has been estimated that about 600 men were supplied by Falls County to the Confederate Army. Many replacements after battles were acquired from the County.

**COUNTY CONTRIBUTED SUPPLIES.** During the war, the county was busy supplying men and materials to their government (Confederate States of America). George H. and J. T. Gassaway held a special commission to furnish cattle and other live-stock. The Honorable Churchill Jones Bartlett, one-time Secretary of State (Texas) and an untiring historian, told many stories and preserved many papers of this period. The following two letters to Ordnance Officer, Zenas Bartlett, from the Adjutant General, Dashiell, and Brigadier General Scofield, tell something of Falls County's activities for procurement of arms:

Hillsboro, Texas,  
March 15, 1862

Mr. Z. Bartlett  
Marlin, Texas

Sir,

You will do your country a good service by acting as ordnance officer for your county. You will collect arms from the patriotic citizens, appraise them at a fair valuation, and under no circumstance permit an exorbitant estimate, --- receipting to them for the same; to be held by the state until the necessity for their use no longer exists; and to employ competent persons, gunsmiths, and others at a fair compensation



to put them in complete repair, that they may be issued to troops in the *field*. The arms to be held by you subject to the order of the Adjutant and Inspector General.

When arms are repaired conformably to the requirements of this order, you will approve the accounts and send them to my office at Hillsboro, and I will certify them, and send them to the Adjutant and Inspector as Chief ordnance for payment.

By order of

Gov. H. R. Lubbock

Jno. S. Scofield

Brig. Gen. of 28th Brigade State Troop.

State of Texas

Adjutant and Inspector General's Office

Austin, October 15, 1862

Z. Bartlett, Esq.

Ord. Off. Falls County

Sir:

Yours of the 4th inst. has been received. Your report shows the following purchases, viz, 3 Plain Rifles purchased from I. M. Estes one \$5.50, one \$4.50, and one \$7.00, making \$17.00, 1 Flint lock musket from E. B. Maines, price \$5.00, 1 plain rifle from J. D. Oltorf, price \$10.00, 1 plain rifle from I. L. Cerioly, price \$10.00, 1 Mississippi rifle from Wm. M. Criswell, price \$5.00.

If you wish funds to pay for these purchases, draw on this office at sight and the draft will be met, and after you make the payment, take respective receipts for the money specifying the article and forward as a *voucher* for the purchase. You will make no further purchases unless by direction of the authorities through this office, as the Military Board have thought proper to order that the ordnance accounts be closed.

Very Respectfully Yr. Obt. Serv.

J. Y. Dashiell

Adjt. & Insp. Genl.

If not repaired, you will send to Austin for repairs, but if you have made a contract for repairing, you will see it executed.

The people contributed generously to the war effort. Benjamin G. Shields, who had spoken candidly and openly against secession and became unpopular, later served in Reconstruction times. Churchill Jones said to be the County's largest slave-owner and land owner, had urged moderation and, though opposed to secession, contributed to the Cause throughout the conflict, after his neighbors joined the Confederacy. A son, William Jones, and his nephew, Austin Robinson, enlisted and served with a Texas Company.

At Carolina, one of the earliest settlements west of the river, Milburn Westmoreland, early merchant and busi-

ness man also had opposed disruption of the Union, but when the die was cast, served well, fought as a cavalrman and lost his life by Bush Rangers in 1864.

**SAM HOUSTON STOOD FIRM.** Sam Houston, whose sincerity no one questioned, could not join the secession movement. He refused to take the oath of allegiance to the Confederate States of America and was deposed as governor. When President Lincoln offered to sustain him in office the old patriot wrote, "I love Texas too well to bring strife and bloodshed to her. --- It is perhaps meet that my career should close thus. I have seen patriots and statesmen of my youth one by one gathered to their fathers, and the government which they have reared rent in twain ---- I stand the last almost of my race ----." (Two years later he died at his home in Huntsville. It was said that before he died, he saw that his words and warnings were proving prophetic, that his heart was torn with grief and he visualized a new day for Texas, in which there would be more opportunities for him to serve.)

**ENTHUSIASM FOR A CAUSE.** Perhaps, Falls County's outstanding soldier was Captain Willis L. Lang, a wealthy plantation owner. Captain Lang raised and equipped



CAPT. WILLIS L. LANG  
(Picture by Courtesy of J. B. Billingsley of Marlin.)

his own company, which became Company "B," in Green's Regiment of Sibley's Brigade. This little band formed the spearhead for the Battle of Valverde. The following letter from Captain Lang, written after he was severely wounded in the battle, tells the gallant story. (It was written to Zenas Bartlett, his intimate friend, who was serving as County Ordnance Officer.—Editor).

Cecera, New Mexico  
Feb. 27, 1862.

Z. Bartlett

Dear Sir:

We met the enemy near Fort Craigg and gained a signal battle. Our victory was complete. The enemy were 3,000 strong with 7 pieces of Artillery. The loss on their side was very great, full (300) three hundred killed and sixteen wagon loads wounded. Our loss was 45 killed and about 60 wounded. We took all their Artillery. The charge upon the Artillery was terrible, and what is astonishing, but few fell --- the greatest loss was on our little company, --9 were killed, to wit: Isaac Marlin, Henry Persons, Joseph Curry, F. Conty, Silas Ivins, Andrew Bell, J. Dougheity, Robert Mitchell, and J. Furgeson; 11 wounded, to-wit: Lieutenant Bass, Get Forbes, J. Sanders, Ed S. Shelton, Pen Parker, Jack Davis, Hillery Persons, J. A. Lea, Wade Coleman, George Bolster, and myself. None are severely wounded but Mr. Bass, whose left arm is so completely fractured and shot to pieces that he was obliged to have it amputated this morning. He received 7 shots in all, and Jack Davis was also severely wounded. My own that he was obliged to have it amputated this morning. He received wound is dangerous. Those who are called to shed a tear over the fate of their relative or friend may have the consolation that it was not over a coward. The conduct of the company will elicit applause from friend and foe. Please send copies of this letter throughout the country that the friends may know who have fallen and who have been injured. Send one to James Anders; and tell him to kiss Ida a thousand times. I may not live to do so again.

Respectfully yours,  
Willis L. Lang

Not long after writing this letter, Captain Lang ended his own life, as his pain was very great and he did not wish to burden his men, for he knew his wound was mortal. Though Captain Lang and his comrades are long since dead, their glory is the glory of Falls County—their noble sacrifice, the county's heritage.

**SUPPLIES CONTRIBUTED.** In addition to many men, Falls County contributed to the Confederate Cause in other ways. Many of its cattle, mules and other live stock were shipped to Louisiana and elsewhere for the armies. People at home—old people, women and children—worked long hours to preserve essentials and provide their men in the army with things they could get only from people “back home.”

The San Antonio Express of July 30, 1916, published over a page of illustrated story relating to Captain Edgar C. Singer, who lived in Marlin at that time and left descendants in the County. The newspaper reported “Captain Singer invented the first successful torpedo, or



submarine, not long after the Monitor drove the Merrimac back to Norfolk, Virginia." Captain Singer made successful experiments exploding powder under water, while with Shea's Battalion of Light Artillery, stationed at Port Lavaca, Texas. He was ordered to report to General Magruder at Houston, where he demonstrated his "torpedo" in Buffalo Bayou. He was then ordered to report to General Maury at Mobile, Alabama, and after reports and demonstrations there, Confederate officials adopted the "submarine as a legitimate weapon of defense" and furnished Captain Singer and other engineers "twenty-five men, necessary ammunition and supplies for manufacturing the devices, which were protected by patents." The torpedoes (or "submarines") proved effective for defense and Union soldiers called them the "Southern torpedoes." They were considered deadly and effective weapons of defense, the featured story in the newspaper recorded.

**THE SOUTH OVERWHELMED.** The war ended disastrously for the South. The people of the Confederate States of America were overwhelmed by superior numbers and facilities for war. They could not compete with the industrial North and Northeast. The daring, skill and determination of the Confederate soldiers became an epic in world history. At first, when they possessed comparable numbers and weapons, they were eminently successful. Their adversaries were soon aware that the South was inspired with patriotic beliefs in rights under the Constitution and unsurpassed zeal and determination. The North realized unexcelled military leaders were directing unequalled soldiers. Their commander-in-chief, Robert E. Lee, and his generals, Joseph E. Johnston, Stonewall Jackson, Thomas B. Hood, Nathan B. Forrest and others were even more skillful and daring than they had anticipated. Even during the last days of the conflict, with overwhelming odds against them, the soldiers of the Gray amazed the North and the world with their resourcefulness and courage.

The story of the memorable conflict cannot be reviewed here. In April, 1865, at Appamattox, Virginia, General

Robert E. Lee surrendered the remnants of a once proud, victorious army, overwhelmed, not by bravery and fighting skill, but by greatly superior numbers and military equipment. A month and four days later, the last battle of the war was fought in Texas, May 13, 1865, at Palmito Ranch near Brownsville—and the Confederates won! Neither Colonel Ford, commanding the Confederates (Texans), nor the men, knew that General Lee had surrendered, so limited were communication facilities.

After the war, weary, hungry, ragged and penniless veterans, unpaid for their war services for months, began their hapless journeys homewards—to what was left of devastated lands—to their heroic and poverty-stricken families, who likewise had lived an epic four years of courage and determination.

**VETERANS CARRY ON.** Many former Wearers of the Gray migrated from other States to Texas, seeking new opportunities. Numbers came to Falls County and helped bring the county from despair and gloom—back to progress and prosperity. It is impossible to know the names of those who came after the war. A few decades ago the "Willis L. Lang Camp of Confederate Veterans" was organized and, while active, the organization compiled a list of Confederate veterans, showing where they lived, when the list was compiled (late in the 1920s or early 1930s). When the Camp was merged with the Old Settlers Association into the organization now known as the "Old Settlers and Veterans Association," the list of Confederate veterans came into possession of the latter. As far as known, it is the only list of Confederate veterans compiled. The list is reproduced as follows:

ALLEN, J. W., Private, Co. "G," 5th Texas Cavalry, Hood's Brigade, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Cameron, Texas, March, 1861. Marlin, Texas.

ANDERSON, S. H., Private, Co. "C," Fulsom's Cavalry, Walker's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Carthage, Texas, December, 1863. Marlin, Texas.

ASBURY, J. T., Private, Co. "A," 30th Rifles, Gans Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted Falls Co., Texas, 1863. Rosebud, Texas.

AISTRAP, J. F., Private, Co. "A," 5th D. S. Regt., Marshall's Brigade, Brackenridge's Division, Hood's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted Morgan Co., Ky., April, 1861. Marlin, Texas.



- AINSWORTH, J. G., Forage Master, Co. "C," Terrill's Infantry, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted Trinity Co., Texas, January 18, 1862. Kosse, Texas.
- ARTHUR, J. P., Private, Co. "H," 17th Cavalry, Richardson's Brigade, Trans. Miss. Army, enlisted at Homer, La., Sept., 1861. Lindale, Texas.
- ALLEN, F. L., Rev., Captain, Co. "F," 3rd Cavalry, Wheeler's Brigade, Jno. T. Morgan's Division, W. T. Martin's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted Forsythe Co., Ga., May 5, 1861. Rockdale, Texas.
- ALBERTSON, W. H., Private, Co. "H," 8th Cavalry, Harrison's Brigade, Wheeler's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted Richmond, Texas, July 7, 1862. Lake Charles, La.
- ANDERS, S. J., Private, Co. "D," 1st Cavalry, Armstrong's Brigade, Jackson's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Mississippi. Marlin, Texas.
- ALLEN, W. T., died September 29, 1882.
- ALEXANDER, JAKE, Private, Co. "K," Flourney Regiment, enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- ATTAWAY, H. I., Private, Co. "F," 12th Infantry, Rhode's Brigade, Hill's Division, Jackson's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Alabama. Chilton, Texas.
- ADAMS, R., Private, Co. "D," Bates Regiment, enlisted in Georgia, now resides in Chilton, Texas.
- ALEXANDER, PARSON, enlisted in Kentucky, now resides at Chilton, Texas.
- ALLDAY, CHARLES, Private, Co. "A," 8th Cavalry, Harrison's Brigade, Wheeler's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Wilderville, Texas, September, 1861. Wilderville, Texas.
- ARCHER, D. S., Surgeon, 22nd Mississippi, Wood's Brigade, Bragg's Corps, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Baldwin, Miss., April, 1862. Sweetwater, Texas.
- BARRY, M., 1st Lt., Co. "I," 4th Texas Inf., Hood's Brigade, McLaws Division, Longstreet's Corps, Northern Va. Army, enlisted at Corsicana, Texas, April, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- BOYLES, D. H., Adj't., 56th Cavalry, Ferguson's Brigade, Jackson's Division, Wheeler's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Mobile, Alabama, July 17, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- BARTON, F. J., Private, Co. "B," Cavalry, Hardiman's Brigade, Smith Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, April, 1862. Reagan, Texas.
- BELLINGER, JOHN, Private, 2nd Infantry, Kershaw's Brigade, McLaws Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Charleston, S. C., May, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- BIRKES, J. M., Private, Co. "A," 30th Texas Cavalry, Gano Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted Falls Co., Texas, 1863. Dot, Texas.
- BIRKES, W. C., 1st Corpl., Co. "A," 30th Texas Cavalry, Gano Brigade, Trans-Mississippi Army, enlisted Falls Co., Texas, 1862. Lott, Texas.
- BARNES, G. W., Private, Co. "E," 1st Cavalry Legion, Ross's Brigade, W. H. Jackson's Division, Forrest's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Jasper, Texas, 1861. Reagan, Texas.
- BEDGOOD, J. A., Private, Co. "A," 26th Infy., Colquett's Brigade, A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Georgia.
- BYNUM, W. C., Private, Co. "A," 2nd Infy., Whiting's Brigade, Jackson's Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Corinth, Miss., 1861. Blevins, Texas.
- BURKE, W. Z., Company "B," Waller's Cavalry, Green's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Reagan, Texas.
- BISHOP, H., Co. "K," Randall's Brigade, Reagan, Texas.
- BRINK, JACOB, 3rd Sgt., Co. "E," Baylor's Cavalry, Green's Brigade, Trans-Mississippi Army, enlisted at Cameron, Texas, May, 1861.



- BLACK, T. M., Private, Co. "D," 26th Cavalry, DeBray's Regiment, Trans-Mississippi Army, enlisted in Milam Co., Texas, May 1, 1861. Mooreville, Texas.
- BRADSHAW, M. L., Private, Co. "B," 1st & 27th Infy., Manny's Brigade, Cheatham's Division, Polk's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Weakley Co., Tennessee, August 19, 1861. Otto, Texas.
- BRADY, J. T., Seaman, Merrimac, C. S. Navy, enlisted Charleston, S. C., 1861. Odds, Texas.
- BRYANT, I., Private, Co. "E," 7th Cavalry, Armstrong's Brigade, Jackson's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted New Albany, Miss., August, 1862. Birdston, Texas.
- BOWERS, D., Private, Co. "I," Infantry, Walthats Brigade, A.N.V. Army, enlisted Lafayette Co., Miss., 1862. Blevins, Texas.
- BAUCHILLEN, F. S., Private, Co. "A," 18th Infantry, Hemphill's Brigade, Longstreet's Corps, enlisted Brandon, Miss., 1862. Durango, Texas.
- BLOXOM, L., Private, Co. "C," 1st Alabama Regiment, Bragg's Brigade, enlisted at Allerton, Alabama, 1861. Lott, Texas.
- BUSTER, F. B., Private, Co. "H," Mormorn's Regt., Cabell's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Arkansas. Durango, Texas.
- BULL, J. D., Jr., Private, Green's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Falls Co., Texas, 1862.
- BULL, I. L., Private, Green's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Falls Co., Texas, 1862.
- BAILEY, Q. K., Private, Co. "A," 1st Cavalry, Cavall's Brigade, Fagan's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted Phillips Co., Arkansas, August 1, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- BOUCHILLON, Private, Co. "E," 2nd Inf., Pettus Brigade, Stephenson Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Green Co., Alabama, 1862. Durango, Texas.
- BASKIN, JOHN J., Private, Co. "B," 36th Inf., enlisted in Alabama.
- BLACKWELL, W. J., Private, Co. "K," Hardy Inf., enlisted in Ark. Durango, Texas.
- BARKER THOMAS, Private, Co. "H," 20th Inf., enlisted in Texas. Lott, Texas.
- BOYD, W. J., Private, Co. "D," 13th Inf., enlisted in Mississippi. Durango, Texas.
- BONNER, C., 2nd Lt., Co. "G," 35th Inf., Cleburn's Brigade, Tenn. Army, enlisted in Tennessee.
- BONNER, N. S., Private, Co. "H," 11th Cavalry, enlisted in Tennessee.
- BUTTS, JOHN D., Private, Co. "I," 5th Cav., enlisted in Alabama. Wilderville, Texas.
- BEDICHECK, J. M., 1st Sgt., Co. "G," 5th Cav., enlisted in Mo. Eddy, Texas.
- BARLOW, W. R., Private, Co. "I," 5th Inf., Hood's Brigade, Longstreet Corps, A.N.V., enlisted in Texas.
- BRIGGS, W. J., Corp., Art., enlisted in La.
- BATES, J. L., enlisted in La.
- BARTON, JAMES, Private, Co. "B," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Marlin, Texas, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- BUTCHEE, A., Marlin, Texas.
- BROOKS, WILLIAM, Maj., Marlin, Texas.
- BLAIN, S. A., enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- BARTON, JOHN, Private, 11th Cav., Tennessee Army, enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- BOWEN, J. T., 1st Sgt., Co. "F," 50th Regt., Day's Brigade, Hindman's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Tuscaloosa, Ala., June, 1861. Oenaville, Texas.
- BARNUS, SAM. Marlin, Texas.

- BARNUS, FRANK, Lt., Co. "B," Walker's Bat., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Marlin, Texas, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- BARTON, W. A., Private, 11th Texas Cavalry, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Texas. Hico, Texas.
- BELL, ANDREW, Private, Co. "B," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Marlin, Texas.
- BROOKS, JAS. J., Lt.
- BROWN, E. T., Private, Co. "A," 32nd Inf., Pat Cleburn's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Runge, Miss., March, 1862. Eddy, Texas.
- BAKER, J. D., Private, Co. "J," 11th Texas, Inf., Randall's Brigade, Walker's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Nacogdoches, Texas, 1861. Reagan, Texas.
- BUNN, J. G., Private, Co. "H," 19th Cav., Longstreet's Corps, N. Va. Army, enlisted in Jaunta, Miss., April, 1861. Frosa, Texas.
- BARNETT, J. W., Sgt., Co. "B," 26th Texas Cav., De Bray's Brigade, Walker's Division, Smith's Corps, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Lockhart, Texas, August 18, 1861. Houston, Texas.
- BRIGGS, L. M., Sgt., Co. "B," 15th Inf., Polinac Brigade, Walker's Division, Monton Corps, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Kosse, Texas, 1861. Kosse, Texas.
- BEIMER, H., Private, Co. "H," 17th Texas Infy., Watterhouse Brigade, Walker's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Colorado Co., Texas, 1862. Westphalia, Texas.
- BROWN, JOSEPH, Private, Co. "A," 8th Texas Cavalry, Harrison's Brigade, Wheeler's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Wilderville, Texas, September, 1861. Wilderville, Texas.
- BARNETT, J. W., Private, Marlin, Texas.
- BENNETT, G. H., Teamster, Co. "A," Tenn. Cav., Neely's Brigade, Forrest's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Mascous, Tenn., April, 1863. Thornton, Texas.
- BATTLE, T. E., served with 30th Texas Cavalry, commanded by his father, N. W. Battle, a Colonel.
- COCKRELL, Q. J., Private, Co. "G," 5th Inf., Rhodes' Brigade, Ewell's Division, Jackson's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Livingston, Ala., May 5, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- COVINGTON, L. A., Private, Co. "B," 5th Tex. Cav., Hardiman's Brigade, Wharton's Division, Smith's Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, June, 1862. Reagan, Texas.
- COVINGTON, J. H., Private, Co. "B," Walter's Cavalry, Hardiman's Brigade, Wharton's Division, Smith's Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, April, 1862. Reagan, Texas.
- CROUCH, W. W., Private, Co. "B," Walter's Regiment, Hardiman's Brigade, Wharton's Division, Smith's Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, April, 1862. Reagan, Texas.
- CALHOUN, F. H., Private, Hunt's Company, Artillery, D. H. Hill's Division, Jackson's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Hurtsbower, Ala. St. Patrick, La.
- COLEMAN, M.M., Private, Co. "B," 5th Texas Cav., Green's Brigade, Green's Division, Smith's Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, April, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- COLEMAN, JOHN, Capt., Co. "B," 5th Texas Cav., Green's Brigade, Green's Division, Smith's Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, April, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- COLEMAN, H. S., Private, Co. "B," 5th Texas Cav., Green's Brigade, Green's Division, Smith's Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, April, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- CORK, ALLEN, Private, Co. "B," T.M.V. Regiment, Green's Brigade, Green's Division, Smith's Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, April, 1862. Marlin, Texas.

- COURTNEY, J. M., Private, Company "E," Baylor's Cavalry, Major's Brigade, Green's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Centerville, Texas, Oct., 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- CASEY, R. M., Private, Co. "H," 4th Texas Cav., Sibley's Brigade, Wharton's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at San Antonio, Texas, Sept., 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- CLOY, G. T., Private, Co. "G," 17th Regt., Longstreet's Corp., A.N.V. Army, enlisted at New Road Station, S. C., June 10, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- CARIKER, W. W., Private, Co. "B," 8th Ala. Inf., Wilcox's Brigade, A. P. Hill's Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Wetumka, Ala., Sept. 20, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- CLEAVER, A. W., Corpl., Co. "B," 11th Cav., Villepugh's Brigade, Polk's Corps, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Camden, Ark., 1861. Groesbeck, Texas.
- CURRIE, D. M., Private, Co. "B," 5th Inf., Hood's Brigade, Whittings Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Colorado Co., Texas, 1861. Lott, Texas.
- CHAPMAN, H. M. Private, Co. "E," 4th Inf., Benning's Brigade, Field's Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Evergreen, Ala., Feb., 1861. Lott, Texas.
- CASEY, T. C., Private, Co. "I," 17th Inf., McCullough's Brigade, Walker's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Belton, Texas, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- CORNITIUS, W. A. A., Private, Co. "G," 4th Cav., Green's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Austin, Co., Texas, Aug., 1861. Houston, Texas.
- CROSS, M. M., Private, Co. "C," 33 Inf., Tappen's Brigade, Churchill's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Oseichita Co., Ark., Sept., 1863. Wilderville, Texas.
- CLARK, W. S., Private, Co. "A," Cook's Art., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Coryell Co., Texas, 1864. Marlin, Texas.
- CARTER, S. A., Private, enlisted at Autauga Co., Ala., 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- CORNELISON, JESSE, Private, Co. "K," Cook's Art., enlisted in Falls Co., Texas, 1862. Harlanville, Texas.
- CONNALLY, JONES, Sgt., Co. "I," Carters Regt., Parson's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Brazos Co., Texas, Mar. 1862. Eddy, Texas.
- CANDLER, W. T., Private, Co. "F," 20th Inf., Pettus' Brigade, Hood's Corp, Tenn. Army, enlisted in Perry Co., Ala., Sept. 10, 1861. Durango, Texas.
- CAPPS, J. A., Co. "C," 4th Cav., Cook's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, 1862. Perry, Texas.
- COX, J. B., Private, Co. "K," 17th Inf., Barksdale's Brigade, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Calhoun Co., Miss., Apr. 20, 1861. Eddy, Texas.
- COYLE, A. I., 1st Corpl., Co. "D," 13th Ark. Inf., Gavan's Brigade, Clarbiern's Division, Cheatham's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Cotton Plant, Ark., Aug. 1, 1861. Cego, Texas.
- CLARKSON, W. F., 1st Sgt., Co. "F," 31st Inf., Pettus' Brigade, Stevenson's Div., S. O. Lee's Corps, Tenn. Army, enlisted in Calhoun Co., Ala., Nov. 15, 1862.
- CARLETON, J. T., 2nd Lt., Co. "A," 34th Inf., Mariogault's Brigade, Day's Div., S. O. Lee's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Cooper Co., Ala., Nov. 1, 1862. Baileyville, Texas.
- CAREY, SAMUEL G., Private, Co. "B," 2nd Cav., Mumford's Brigade, Fitzhugh Lee's Division, J. E. B. Stuart's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Petersburg, Va., June 7, 1861. Dallas, Texas.



- CLAWSON, W. M., Private, Co. "K," 1st Art., enlisted in Jefferson Co., Miss., 1861. Reagan, Texas.
- CARTER, H. G., Captain, Co. "D," 4th Texas Cav., Green's Brigade, Green's Division, Smith's Corps, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at San Antonio, Texas, Sept. 16, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- CURRY, M. H., 1st Lt., Co. "H," 38th Inf., enlisted in Mississippi, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- CURRY, F. A., 2nd Sgt., Co. "H," 38th Inf., enlisted in Mississippi. Marlin, Texas.
- CHILTON, W. H., Private, Co. "A," Art., enlisted in Texas. Marlin.
- COSTIN, SAMUEL, Private, Co. "A," 1st Cav., enlisted in Georgia. Blevins, Texas.
- COLLIER, R. P., Private, Co. "A," 58th Cav., enlisted in Alabama. Chilton, Texas.
- CLARK, Dr. T. N., Co. "K," 8th Cavalry, DeBray's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Reagan, Texas.
- CHURCH, LUKE, Private, Co. "B," Walden's Regiment, Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Marlin, Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- CLARKSON, B. B., Private, Captain Bailey's Co., 28th Miss., enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- CORLEY, A. J., Private, Co. "B," Wallace's Bat., Green's Brig., Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Marlin, Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- COON, B., enlisted in Marlin, Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- CANARIAN, ADAM, Private, Co. "B," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Marlin, Texas. Bremond, Texas.
- CARR, D., Private, Co. "A," 9th Cav., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Mississippi. Eddy, Texas.
- COON, J. W., Private, Co. "A," 9th Cav., Wheeler's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Huntsville, Ala. Stranger, Texas.
- CONOLY, J. P., Lieut., Co. "B," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Marlin, Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- COLEMAN, W. F., Private, Co. "E," 2nd Inf., Moore's Brigade, Hardee's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Marlin, Texas.
- CORK, ALLEN, Private, Co. "B," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Marlin, Texas.
- CARLTON, J. T., 3rd Lt., Co. "A," 34th Inf., Chalmer's Brigade, Wither's Division, Polk's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Wetumka, Ala. Baileyville, Texas.
- CLARK, PHILIP C., Private, Maxey's Brigade, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Baton Rouge, La., May 18, 1862.
- CAPHEART, JAMES, Private, Co. "A," 8th Tex. Cavalry, Harrison's Brigade, Wheeler's Division, Texas Army, enlisted at Wilderville, Texas, Sept., 1861. Wilderville, Texas.
- CATHCART, I. H., Private, Co. "E," 17th S. C., Wallace's Brigade, B. Johnson's Division, A.N.V. Corps, Va. Army, enlisted in York Co., S. C., Nov., 1861. Eddy, Texas.
- DeWALT, W. B., Private, Co. "F," 4th Cav., Green's Brigade, Wharton's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Livingston, Texas, November 10, 1863. Reagan, Texas.
- DUPUY, H. G., Sgt., Co. "D," Bookers Cavalry, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Farmerville, Va., 1864. Marlin, Texas.
- DEWBERRY, J. F., Private, Co. "I," 53rd Inf., Roddy's Brigade, Armstrong's Division, Forrest's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Greenville, Ala., 1862. Viesca, Texas.

- DOUGHERTY, M. A., Private, Co. "A," 3rd Inf., Stephenson's Division, Cheatham's Corps, Tennessee Army, Elkton, Tenn., 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- DAVIS, J. J., 2nd Lt., Co. "D," 30th Cav., Walthal's Brigade, Cheatham's Division, Polk's Corps, Tennessee Army, Kascues Co., Miss., 1861. Lott, Texas.
- DICKSON, H. M., Bugler, Co. "B," 11th and 17th Cav., Wirt Adam's Brigade, S. D. Lee's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Hemstead Co., Ark., 1862. Cameron, Texas.
- DENT, PATRICK W., Private, Irish Vals, Hampton Cigen's Regt., A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Charleston, S. C., 1863. Texas.
- DAVISON, E. F., Private, Co. "A," 8th Cav., Harrison's Brigade, Hampton's Corps, Tennessee Army, Falls, Co., Texas, 1861. Westphalia, Texas.
- DORSETT, C., Private, Co. "B," 22nd Inf. Travis, Texas.
- DAVIDSON, H. B., Private, Co. "K," 17th Cav. Durango, Texas.
- DEER, JOE S., Private, Co. "G," 7th Cav. Lott, Texas.
- DAVIS, J. H., Private, Co. "C," 10th Cav. Mooreville, Texas.
- DANDY, W. B., Marlin, Texas.
- DUPREE, J. B., Co. "H," 26th Cav., DeBrag's Brigade, Walker's Division, Smith's Corps, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Hockley, Texas, 1862. Hockley, Texas.
- EDDINS, J. R., Private, Co. "H," 17th Inf., Shelly's Brigade, Wathal's Division, Stuart's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Pineapple, Ala., 1861. Stranger, Texas.
- EDWARDS, F. M., Private, Co. "F," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Trinity Co., Texas, 1862. McClanahan, Texas.
- EVANS, D., Private, Eubanks' Cav., Trans-Miss., enlisted at San Augustine, Texas, 1865. McClanahan, Texas.
- ERWIN, H. O., Private, Co. "K," 12th Cav., Forrest Headquarters, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Mooreville, Miss., 1861. Rosebud, Texas.
- ELLIOTT, WILLIAM, Sgt., Co. "E," 48th Inft., Cook's Brigade, Hill's Division, Hill's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted Munroe, N. C., 1862. Lott, Texas.
- ESTES, BEN, Private, Co. "K," 6th Texas Cav., Ross' Brigade, Jackson's Division, Hardee's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at McKinney, Texas, 1861. McKinney, Texas.
- ELLIOTT, W. G., Sgt., Co. "E," 48th N. C. Inf., Cook's Brigade, Heth's Division, Hill's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Union, N. C., 1862. Eddy, Texas.
- EVANS, L. L., Private, Co. "H," 1st Inf., Hood's Brigade, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Texas. Travis, Texas.
- EARL, JAMES, Private, Co. "B," Walker's Bat., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- EARBEE, Dr. F., Marlin, Texas.
- ERSKINE, J. W., Sgt., Co. "K," Cook's Art., Magruda's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, 1862. Odds, Texas.
- EWING, T. J., Private, Co. "A," 26th Tex. Cav., DeBryes Brigade, Walker's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Houston, Texas, April, 1862. Houston, Texas.
- FERGUSON, A. H., 2nd Lt., Co. "C," 33rd Ala. Inf., Lowery's Brigade, Cleburn's Division, Hardee's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Greenville, Ala., March 12, 1862. Rosebud, Texas.
- FRAZIER, A., P. A., Sgt., Co. "E," 2nd Inf., Moore's Brigade, Maury's Division, Hardee's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Galveston, Texas, Sept. 5, 1861. Marlin, Texas.



- FRAZIER, D., 1st Lt., Co. "C," 8th Tex. Inf., Han's Brigade, Walker's Division, Smith's Army, enlisted at Hempstead, Texas, April 8, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- FINLEY, A. A., Private, Co. "E," 2nd Cav., Smith's Army, enlisted at Griffin, Ga., 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- FOREST, B. F., Private, Co. "E," 16th Miss. Inf., S. D. Lee's Division, Pemberton's Army, enlisted at Holmsville, Miss., May 1, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- FRANCKS, H. C., Private, Co. "B," 5th Texas Cav., Hardiman's Division, Green's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, April 22, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- FRAZEL, ALBERT, Private, Co. "B," 5th T.M.V., Hardiman's Brigade, Green's Div., Trans-Mississippi Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, April 22, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- FISER, LEE, Private, Co. "G," 16th Inf., Parson's Brigade, Price's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Baxter Springs, Kan., Aug. 3, 1862. Mooreville, Texas.
- FOUNTAIN, T. G., 3rd Lt., Co. "F," 53rd Cav., Harrison's Brigade, Kelly's Division, Wheeler's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Newton's Landing, Ala., 1862. Reagan, Texas.
- FANNIN, W. T., Private, Co. "C," 21st Inf., Humphrey's Brigade, Kershaw's Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Brookhaven, Miss., March 17, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- FREEMAN, J. M., Private, Co. "A," 31st Inf., Clingman's Brigade, Hoke's Division, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Lumberton, N. C., Sept. 1, 1861. Chilton, Texas.
- FOLL, P. H., Private, 21st Miss., Vandome's Division, Pemberton's Corps, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Vicksburg, Miss., April, 1861. Houston, Texas.
- FALCONER, W. L., Private, Co. "E," Mormon's Cav., Tennessee Army, enlisted in Mississippi. Marlin, Texas.
- FOSTER, W. J., 2nd Lt., Co. "C," Randel Cav., Steel's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas.
- FORTUNE, H. H., Private, Co. "B," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- FIELD, CHARLES, 5th Inf. Brigade, Rhodes Division, Jackson's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Ala. Marlin, Texas.
- FLEMING, JACK, Private, Co. "F," 1st Cav., Dockey's Brigade, Price Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Montecello, Ark., July, 1864. Marlin, Texas.
- FOLK, JAMES H., Private, Co. "A," 8th Tex. Cav., Harrison's Brigade, Wheeler's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Wilderville, Texas, Sept., 1861. Wilderville, Texas.
- GARRETT, R. J., Private, Co. "B," Green's Regt., Sibley's Brigade, enlisted at San Antonio, Texas, Sept., 1861. Stranger, Texas.
- GENTRY, G. T., Private, Co. "B," Walker's Cav., Green's Brigade, Smith's Army, enlisted at Hempstead, Texas, January, 1864. Marlin, Texas.
- GARRETT, T. P., Private, Co. "A," 26th Inf., Tightman's Brigade, Loring's Division, enlisted at Iuka, Miss., May 15, 1861.
- GILBERT, R. B., Private, Co. "C," 24th Cav., Login's Brigade, enlisted at Caseyville, Miss., May 15, 1862. Otto, Texas.
- GARRETT, A. J., Private, Co. "A," 26th Inf., Tightman's Brigade, Loring's Division, enlisted at Iuka, Miss., May 15, 1861.
- GASSAWAY, G. H., Capt., Independent, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Falls County, Texas, June, 1861. Lott, Texas.
- GORDON, T. T., 2nd Sgt., 53rd Cav., Roddy's Brigade, Forrest's Division, Wheeler's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Naynesville, Ala., Dec., 1862. Chilton, Texas.



- GLASS, E. R. P., Private, Co. "G," 1st Cav., Armstrong's Brigade, Forrest's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Macon, Miss., 1864. Viesca, Texas.
- GUFFIE, J. H., Sgt., Co. "C," 8th Inf., Wall's Brigade, Walker's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Reagan, Texas.
- GWYN, W. H., Private, Co. "K," 2nd Cav., Parson's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Burton, Texas, October, 1861. Lott, Texas.
- GWYN, J. K., Green's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Burton, Texas, 1861. Lott, Texas.
- GOODRICH, L. W., Capt., Co. "G," 30th Cav., Gano's Brigade, Maxey's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Comanche, Texas, July 19, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- GREENLESS, J. P., Private, Co. "E," 5th Inf., Battle's Brigade, Rhodes Division, Jackson's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Gainesville, Ala., April 26, 1861. Baileyville, Texas.
- GARRETT, T. J., Private, Co. "K," 13th Inf., Govan's Brigade, Cleburne's Division, Hardee's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Poinsett Co., Ark., July, 1861. Clarkson, Texas.
- GAMBRELL, D. W., Private, Co. "K," 6th Cav., Butler's Brigade, Fitzhugh Lee's Division, A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Anderson Co., S. C., 1861. Gatesville, Texas.
- GREEN, J. H., Private, Co. "A," 26th Cav., DeBray's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Houston, Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- GREEN, JOE, Private, Walker's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, 1861.
- GATLIN, L. G., Private, Co. "D," 35th Inf., Thomas' Brigade, Hill's Division, Jackson's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Trope Co., Ga., Aug. 8, 1861. Chilton, Texas.
- GWYN, H. C. S., Private, Co. "G," Balentine's Regt., Armstrong's Brigade, Jackson's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Fayette Co., Tenn., 1862. Lott, Texas.
- GADDY, J. M., Private, Co. "F," Brown's Militia, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Atlanta, Ga., 1862. Bremond, Texas.
- GOTT, S. S., Sgt., Co. "A," 8th Cav., Harrison's Brigade, Tenn. Army, enlisted in Falls Co., Texas, August 1861. Lott, Texas.
- GLASS, E. R. P., Private, Co. "G," 11th Cav., Armstrong's Brigade, Jackson's Division, Wheeler's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Knoxville, Miss., 1861. Roswell, N. M.
- GOODMAN, A. J., Private, Co. "E," 20th Cav., Forrest's Brigade, Jackson's Division, Wheeler's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Attalla, Miss., Sept., 1861. Denny, Texas.
- GOSHAM, J. C., Capt., 1st Mo. Art., Jackson's Division, Private Army of Missouri, enlisted at Marshall, Mo., April, 1861. Dallas, Texas.
- GILMORE, STERLING H., Private, Co. "A," 57th Inf., Scott's Brigade, Loring's Division, Polk's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted Troy, Alabama, 1862. Keith, Texas.
- GAMBLE, ISAM, Servant of Dr. J. A. James, Surgeon, Kershaw's Division, enlisted at Kingstree, S. C., 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- GENTRY, W. E., Private, Co. "E," Moseby's 26th Inf. Scouts, A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Mississippi. Blevins, Texas.
- GRESHAM, JOHN, Private, Co. "H," 43rd Inf., enlisted in Tennessee.
- GAMESON, JAMES, 3rd Lt., Co. "I," Gains' Cav., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- GRIGGS, F. M., 1st Corp., Co. "B," 16th Inf., McCullough's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Blevins, Texas.
- GAINES, D. Y., Capt., of Co. "K," of Col. Green's Brigade, Sul Ross Division, Texas Division. Marlin, Texas.

- GARRETT, R., Wilderville, Texas.
- GOODMAN, DUKE, Private, Co. "B," Art., Hay's Brigade, Ewell's Division, T. J. Jackson's Corps, A.N.V., enlisted at New Orleans, La., April 5, 1861. Ft. Worth, Texas.
- GOTT, Ab., Private, 8th Texas Cav., Harrison's Brigade, Wheeler's Division, Tennessee Army, Wilderville, Texas, Sept., 1861. Wilderville, Texas.
- HUTCHINGS, S. D., Private, Co. "G," 10th Cav., Ector's Brigade, French's Division, Polk's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Belview, Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- HILL, J. H., Private, Co. "A," 26th Inf., Davis' Brigade, Hill's Corps, A.N.V., enlisted at New Salem, Miss., April 15, 1861. Lott, Texas.
- HUNNICUTT, W. S., Private, Co. "B," Waller's Battalion of Cavalry, Hardiman's Division, Smith's Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, April, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- HANDER, WILLIAM, 3rd Sgt., Co. "C," Waul's Texas Legion, Pemper-ton Army, enlisted at Bellville, Texas, March, 1862. Stamp, Texas.
- HANDER, CHARLES, Private, enlisted at Round Top, Texas, 1862. Austin Confederate Home, Austin, Texas.
- HUNNICUTT, W. P., Private, Co. "F," 13th Cav., Wickham's Brigade, W. H. T. Lee's Division, Stuart's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Prince George, Va., 1861. Chilton, Texas.
- HARRIS, A. C., Private, Co. "D," 21st Cav., Parson's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Belton, Texas, Feb. 5, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- HAIR, T. J., Private, Co. "E," 8th Inf., Jackson's Brigade, Cheatham's Division, Hardee's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Paulding, Miss., 1862. Stranger, Texas.
- HERRING, H. T., Private, Co. "D," 1st Cav., Roddy's Brigade, Forrest Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted Cedar Plains, Ala., Aug. 19, 1862. Travis, Texas.
- HETHERINGTON, W. G., Private, Co. "A," 4th Inf., Bakers Brigade, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Claiborne, Ala., 1862. Reagan, Texas.
- HETHERINGTON, J. M., Private, Co. "H," 42nd Inf., Baker's Brigade, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Claiborne, Ala., 1862. Reagan, Texas.
- HAYES, J. S., Private, Co. "G," 11th Cav., Bell's Brigade, Forrest's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Pulaski, Tennessee, December, 1862. Stranger, Texas.
- HAGENS, W. B., Private, Co. "B," 10th Cav., Ector's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Gilmer, Texas.
- HINDMAN, S., Co. "F," 4th Cav., Green's Brigade, Wharton's Division, Trans-Miss. Army.
- HARRIS, A. T., Private, Co. "A," 4th Cav., Forrest's Brigade, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Coffee Co., Tenn. Mooreville, Texas.
- HODGES, GEO. A., Private, Co. "D," 4th Texas Inf., Hood's Texas Brigade, Hood's Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Guadalupe Co., Texas, April 23, 1862. Lott, Texas.
- HARTWELL, C. E., Private, Co. "E," 16th Inf., Harris' Brigade, Mahone's Division, Hill's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Holmesville, Miss., April 26, 1861. Wesson.
- HENRY, F. M., Capt., Co. "D," 19th Inf., enlisted at Rockport, Ark., 1861. Texarkana, Texas.
- HOUSE, H. P., Private, Co. "A," 13th Inf., Barksdale's Brigade, Kershaw's Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V., enlisted at Cansville, Miss., April 1, 1861. Franklin, Texas.
- HOLMAN, W. S., 2nd Lt., Co. "E," 3rd Texas Cav., Ross's Brigade, Jackson's Division, Forrest's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Dallas, Texas, June 13, 1861.

- HOOPER, F. F., Private, Co. "F," 8th Texas Cav., Harrison's Brigade, Wheeler's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at LaGrange, Texas, May, 1861. Calvert, Texas.  
Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at LaGrange, Texas, May, 1861.
- HODGES, E. R., Private, Co. "H," 2nd Cav., Ferguson's Brigade, Jackson's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Canacuh, Alabama, 1861. Lott, Texas.
- HODGES, J. J., Private, Co. "H," 2nd Cav., Ferguson's Brigade, Jackson's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Canacuh, Alabama, 1861.
- HARRIS, M., Courier, Co. "A," 8th Cavalry, Pillow's Brigade, Jackson's Division, Hardee's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Selma, Alabama, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- HOWARD, J. R., Private, Co. "D," 61st Ala., Battles' Brigade, Rhodes' Division, N.Va. Army, enlisted at Greenville, Ala., Jan. 10, 1863. Marlin, Texas.
- HAWKINS, PERRY, Chaplain, 2nd S. C. Art., Hardee's Brigade, Beauregard's Division, enlisted at Greenville, S. C., July, 1861. Taylor, Texas.
- HALL, D., Private, Co. "F," 27th Inf. Chilton, Texas.
- HODGES, E. H., Private, Co. "A," 22nd Inf., enlisted in Texas. Lott, Texas.
- HEDRICK, J. T., 1st Sgt., Co. "B," 15th Inf., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Durango, Texas.
- HALE, P. B., Private, Co. "I," 16th Inf., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Reagan, Texas.
- HARLAN, J. H., 1st Corpl., Co. "G," 25th Inf., enlisted in Alabama. Reagan, Texas.
- HARLAN, J. T., Private, Co. "G," 25th Inf., enlisted in Alabama. Reagan, Texas.
- HOLLOWAY, J. N., Private, Co. "F," 53rd Cav., enlisted in Alabama. Marlin, Texas.
- HOLDER, NOAH, Private, Co. "G," 53rd Cav., enlisted in Tenn. Marlin, Texas.
- HUGHES, T. H., Seaman, Steamer Henry Hill, Navy, enlisted in La. Marlin, Texas.
- HUGHES, D. S., Private, Co. "F," 41st Inf., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss., enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- HEMPHILL, SAM, enlisted in Miss. Marlin, Texas.
- HEMPHILL, Dr., enlisted in Miss. Marlin, Texas.
- HAZLEWOOD, W. W., enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- HARLAN, GEORGE, enlisted in Texas. Harlanville, Texas.
- HUDSON, W. H., Wilderville, Texas.
- HAM, W. C., Co. "D," Well's Regiment, Gano's Brigade, Durango, Texas.
- HARTHCOCK, W. E., Private, Ind. Cavalry, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Ebenezer, Miss., April, 1863. Chilton, Texas.
- HOLSCHER, A. J., Private, Co. "B," 8th Texas Inf., enlisted in Fayette Co., 1865.
- HOFFMAN, JAMES F., Private, Co. "C," 26th Inf., Joe Davis' Brigade, Heath's Division, Longstreet's Corps, N.V.A. Army, enlisted at Booneville, Miss., April 10, 1862. Greenville, Texas.
- HAMMER, W. J., enlisted in Alabama. Marlin, Texas.
- IRWIN, W. H., Private, Co. "B," 22nd Inf., Walker's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Centerville, Texas, 1861. Travis, Texas.
- IRWIN, G. W., Private, Hood's Brigade, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Texas. Wilderville, Texas.



- JORDAN, J. J., Private, Co. "H," Phillip's Inf., Major's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Denton, Texas. Chilton, Texas.
- JOLLY, JNO. M., Corps of Colors, Co. "K," 4th Inf., Early's Brigade, A.N.V., enlisted at Pendleton, S. C., April 14, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- JONES, W. H., 2nd Lieut., Co. "A," 8th Tex. Cav., Harrison's Brigade Wheeler's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, Sept 7, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- JACKSON, TERRELL, Sgt., Co. "K," 4th Inf., Featherstone's Brigade, Loving's Division, A. P. Stewart's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Kascuesko, Miss., April, 1861. Eddy, Texas.
- JOHNSON, W. G., Capt., Co. "A," Cook's Art., Trans-Miss. Army.
- JONES, JAMES, 2nd Sgt., Co. "A," Cook's Art., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in McLennan Co., Texas, Jan. 27, 1862. Mooreville, Texas.
- JONES, R. H., Private, State Cav., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted 1864. Mooreville, Texas.
- JONES, H. R., Private, Co. "A," Cook's Art., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted McLennan Co., Texas, Jan. 27, 1862. Mooreville, Texas.
- JONES, J. B., Private, Co. "I," 27th Cav., J. H. Morgan's Brigade, Wheeler's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Sumpter, Tennessee, 1863. Marlin, Texas.
- JONES, R. J., Private, Co. "K," 41st Inf., Chalmar's Brigade, Cheatham's Division, Polk's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Noxubee, Co., Miss., 1862. Lott, Texas.
- JARRELL, J. M., Private, Co. "B," 32nd Inf., Mercer's Brigade, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Talboton, Ga., 1862. Viesca, Texas.
- JONES, J. J., Private, Co. "A," 1st Inf., Lane's Brigade, Magruder's Division, A.N.V., enlisted at Ransom's Bridge, N. C., 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- JORDAN, JNO. J., Private, Co. "F," 1st Cav., Armstrong's Brigade, W. H. Jackson's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Shugualak, Miss., March, 1863. Lott, Texas.
- JOHNSON, W. A. J., Private, Co. "B," Wallace's Cav., Hardiman's Brigade, Taylor's Division, Trans-Miss., enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- JINKS, W. J., Private, Co. "F," 48th Inf., enlisted in Alabama. Viesca, Texas.
- JONES, S. S., Private, Co. "I," 15th Inf., Polignac's Brigade, Monton's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Reagan, Texas.
- JORDAN, J. G., Private, Co. "A," Clanton's Bat., enlisted in Ala.
- JOLLY, P. W., enlisted in Marlin, Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- JOYNER, J. A., Private, Co. "I," 9th Cav., Forrest's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Roanoak, Ala., Sept., 1862. Reagan, Texas.
- KELLY, L. W., Private, Co. "F," Inf., McGowen's Brigade, A. P. Hill's Division, T. J. Jackson's Corps, A.N.V., enlisted at Bachelor's Retreat, S. C., June, 1861. Reagan, Texas.
- KING, G. A., Capt., Co. "A," Green's Brigade, Tanker's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at San Antonio, Texas, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- KING, T. B., Private, Co. "H," Edmon's Inf., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Owensville, Texas, April, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- KING, D., Private, Co. "F," 2nd Miss. Cav., Armstrong's Brigade, Walt Jackson's Division, Forrest's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Quitman, Miss., April, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- KUNZE, G. E., Private, Co. "B," Bates Cav., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at East Bernard, Texas. 1863. Marlin, Texas.
- KIERSEY, P., Private, Co. "B," 9th Inf., Cheatham's Brigade, Polk's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Alamo, Tenn., 1861. Chilton, Texas.
- KIRKPATRICK, J. R., Private, Green's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Mooreville, Texas, 1861. Dot, Texas.

- KEELING, W. J., Co. "C," 3rd Inf., Hood's Brigade, A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Arkansas.
- KELLY, S. O., Private, Co. "G," 15th Ala. Inf., Law's Brigade, Hood's Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Abbeville, Ala., July, 1861. Viesca, Texas.
- KNOWLES, IKE, 1st Sgt., Co. "A," 4th Ala. Cav., Forrest's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Pineapple, Ala., July, 1861. Chilton, Texas.
- KIRKPATRICK, J. M., Private, Co. "I," 6th Inf., enlisted in Alabama. Perry, Texas.
- KIMBROUGH, W. H., 1st Corp., Co. "D," Waller's Bat., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- KILLEBREW, B., Private, Co. "D," Elmon's Art., enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- KELLY, GEO. W., Sgt., 2nd Rifles, enlisted at Bachelor's Retreat, S. C. Odds, Texas.
- KIRKLEY, J. E., Marlin, Texas.
- LOUREY, J. M., Private, Co. "D," 2nd Inf., Forrest's Brigade, enlisted at Hopkinsville, Ky., Aug., 1863. Marlin, Texas.
- LAIRD, E., Private, Co. "B," 18th Ala. Inf., Clayton's Brigade, Breckenridge's Division, Hardee's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Leon, Ala., July 25, 1861. Reagan, Texas.
- LENOIR, J. L., 1st Lt., Adam's Brigade, Lowrey's Division, Polk's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Aberdeen, Miss., July, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- LAUGHLIN, T. J., Engineer, Navy, C. S. Steamer, Tyson's Division, enlisted at Goliad, Texas, Sept., 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- LONG, TOM, Private, Co. "G," 5th Texas Inf., Hood's Brigade, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Cameron, Texas, March 3, 1861.
- LONG, B. D., Private, Co. "E," 4th Inf., Hood's Brigade, A.N.V. Army.
- LOWREY, J. C., Private, Co. "D," 30th Inf., Walthal's Brigade, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Kuscisko, Miss. Reagan, Texas.
- LLOYD, J. S., Private, Co. "E," 32nd Inf., Holtzchaws' Brigade, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Clark Co., Ala., March, 1862. Durango Texas.
- LLOYD, JOHN, 1st Lt., Co. "E," 2nd Texas, Moore's Brigade, Maurey's Division, J. E. Johnston's Corps, Tennessee Army, Wheelock, Texas, September 5, 1861. Taylor, Texas.
- LOCKHART, N., Private, Co. "C," 28th Miss., Armstrong's Brigade, Jackson's Division, Forrest's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Vicksburg, Miss., 1861. Chilton, Texas.
- LUMPKIN, C. D., Private, Co. "H," 8th Inf., Anderson's Brigade, Hood's Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Floyd Co., Ga., 1861. Otto, Texas.
- LEHMAN, J. M., Private, Co. "D," 4th Inf., Green's Brigade, Taylor's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Cameron, Texas. Lott, Texas.
- LACEY, B. McK., Adj., Griffin's Bat., enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- LENOIR, H. H., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Marlin. Marlin, Texas.
- LANG, W. H., Capt., Tennessee Army, Marlin, Texas.
- LANG, W. L., Capt., Co. "B," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas. April 22, 1861.
- LOWREY, T. D., 28th Inf., Gracie's Brigade, Johnston's Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Bremond, Texas.
- LAMPKIN, MUNROE,
- LASKI, M. B., Private, Jeff Davis Artillery, Army of Va., enlisted at Salma, Ala., 1861. Wellborn, Texas.



- LANE, J. S., Private, Scout, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Memphis, Tenn., April, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- LANDRUM, SAM, served with Co. "B," 5th Texas Cavalry, Hardiman's Division, Green's Corps, Trans-Miss. Army.
- MELTON, N., Private, Co. "H," 43rd Miss. Inf., Hebeny's Brigade, S. Price's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Abberdene, Miss., May, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- MORRIS, A. P., Private, Co. "B," 5th Texas Cav., Green's Brigade, Wharton's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- MILLER, JOHN, Private, Co. "B," 29th Inf., Hardiman's Brigade, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Grenada, Miss., 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- MURPHY, W. B., Color Cpl., Co. "A," 2nd Miss. Inf., Joe Davis's Brigade, Heth's Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Rienvi, Miss., Feb. 5, 1863. Marlin, Texas.
- MULLENS, T. W., Sgt., Co. "E," 4th Inf., Hood's Brigade, Field's Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V., enlisted at Waco, Texas, July 22, 1861. McClanahan, Texas.
- MITCHELL, A. G., Private, Co. "A," 2nd Tex. Cav., Green's Brigade, Green's Army, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Columbus, Texas, 1861. Durango, Texas.
- Magee, N. Q., Corpl., Co. "K," 6th Cav., Bagsby's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, 1864. Marlin, Texas.
- MARTIN, G. W., 1st Lt., Co. "F," Elmon's Inf., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- MITCHELL, W. H., Private, Co. "B," Waller's Cav., Green's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Falls County, Texas, April 11, 1863. Harlanville, Texas.
- MARTIN, E. B., Captain, Co. "B," 5th Cav., Alston's Brigade, Stevenson's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Roane Co., Tenn., 1861. Waco, Texas.
- MURPHY, J. W., Private, Co. "C," 28th Inf., Gray's Brigade, Polnac's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Vernon, La., 1863. Lott, Texas.
- MONTGOMERY, R. H., Private, Co. "E," 10th Inf., Wilcox's Brigade, Mahone's Division, A. P. Hill's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Talladaga, Ala., 1862. Georgetown, Texas.
- MOORE, J. T. C., Private, Co. "E," 26th Inf., Davis's Brigade, Heth's Division, Longstreet's Corps, enlisted in Tishamingo Co., Miss., April 5, 1861. Eddy, Texas.
- MATTHEWS, W. W., Private, Co. "F," 27th Inf., Polk's Division, Bragg's Corps, enlisted at Butler, Ga., Aug. 27, 1862. Rosebud, Texas.
- MALONE, THOMAS, Private, Co. "A," 2nd Inf., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Brenham, Texas, March, 1862. Lott, Texas.
- MERRIVILLE, R. P., Private, Co. "C," Polnac's Brigade, Johnston's Division, enlisted at Trinity Co., Texas, June, 1862. Personville, Texas.
- MANNEY, J. W., Private, Co. "A," 2nd Inf., Hays' Brigade, Johnston's Division, Koon's Corps, A.N.V., enlisted at Nachitoches, La., April, 1861. Durango, Texas.
- MOORE, A. H. E., Private Co. "A," 41st Inf., Mahone's Brigade, Anderson's Division, A. P. Hill's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Petersburg, Va., May, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- MOORE, LUTHER, Private, Co. "K," 2nd Cav., Armstrong's Brigade, Jackson's Division, Forrest's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Scott, Co., Miss. Reagan, Texas.
- MOORE, J. T. C., Private, Co. "K," 26th Inf., Davis's Brigade, Heth's Division, A. P. Hill's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Tishamingo Co., Miss., April 5, 1861. Mooreville, Texas.
- MILLERMAN, C. A., Private, 9th Bat., State Troops, enlisted at Alto Springs, Texas. Harlanville, Texas.



- MEARS, J. C., 2nd Sgt., Co. "A," enlisted in N. C. Durango, Texas.
- MILLER, J. T., Corpl., 19th Inf., enlisted in Ark. Travis, Texas.
- MILES, W. T., Private, Co. "F," Reserve Corps, enlisted in Ark. Blevins, Texas.
- MOORE, J. H., Private, Co. "K," 26th Inf., enlisted in Mississippi.
- MARTIN, J. A., Private, enlisted in S. C. Marlin, Texas.
- MONTGOMERY, W. A., enlisted in La. Travis, Texas.
- MITCHELL, A. W., Color Sgt., Co. "E," Gould's Bat., Randle's Brigade, Walker's Division, Smith's Corps, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Madisonville, Texas, Mar., 1861. Midway, Texas.
- MOORE, M. F., Private, Co. "B," 6th Ala. Inf., Battle's Brigade, Rhode's Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Alabama. Cego, Texas.
- MCDONALD, JAMES, Private, Co. "A," 20th Inf., Harrison's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, 1861. Tyler, Texas.
- MCDONALD, J. R., 2nd Master, enlisted at Chappell Hill, Texas.
- McMILLAN, Z. H., 2nd Sgt., Co. "E," 34th Cav., Bauchell's Brigade, Wharton's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Palestine, Texas, May, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- McKINNEY, J. L., Private, Co. "D," 12th Texas Cavalry, Parson's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Bastrop, Texas, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- McLEAN, W. F., Private, Co. "I," 3rd Florida Cav., Mawrey's Brigade, Forrest's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Milton, Florida, December 16, 1862. Viesca, Texas.
- McCOMB, WM., Private, Co. "C," 1st Inf., Breckenridge's Division, Tennessee Army, Selma, Alabama, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- McKINNEY, J. A., Hodges Cavalry, enlisted at DeKaleb, Miss., 1863. Otto, Texas.
- McCULLOUGH, D. R., Private, Co. "C," 6th Cav., Roper's Brigade, Jackson's Division, Vandorn's Corps. Tennessee Army, enlisted at Dallas, Texas, March, 1862. Dallas, Texas.
- MCDOWELL, J. H. T., Cpl., Co. "I," 10th Cav., Beale's Brigade, Stuart's Division, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Richmond, Va., May, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- McKIM, MAJOR, Wagoner, Elmore's Regt., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Harris County, Texas, 1862. Travis, Texas.
- McCOLLUM, J. H., Private, Co. "H," Waller's Legion, Green's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, LaGrange, Texas, 1862. Winchester, Texas.
- McCORD, F. P., Capt., Co. "C," 17th Inf., Benning's Brigade, Field's Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Thornton, Ga., May, 1861. Cameron, Texas.
- McCONNELL, E. J., Private, Co. "C," Phillip's Legion, Hampton's Brigade, Stewart's Division, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Big Shanty, Ga., June, 1861. Childress, Texas.
- McCALL, W. A., Sgt., Co. "D," 5th Inf., Battle's Brigade, Rhode's Division, Jackson's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Alabama, May 5, 1861. Bremond, Texas.
- McCOY, J. M., Private, Co. "H," 37th Inf., enlisted in Alabama. Marlin, Texas.
- McANALLY, H. L., Capt., Scouts, enlisted in Texas.
- McCLANAHAN, J. R., Captain, Co. "G," 1st Inf., Hood's Brigade, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- McKINNEY, W. M., Private, Co. "G," 8th Battalion, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in La. Stranger, Texas.
- McDANIEL, J. A., Private, Co. "B," Speight's Inf., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Kosse, Texas.

- McINTYRE, D., Private, Co. "D," 53rd, enlisted in Mississippi. Platur-nine, La.
- McNAMARA, D., Private, Co. "B," Louisiana Independent Battalion, Hayes Brigade, Heath's Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at New Orleans, La., Feb. 2nd, 1861.
- NORWOOD, J. W., 1st Sgt., Co. "B," 5th Texas Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Smith's Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- NEWMAN, E. P., Seaman, C. S. Steamer Alabama, Raphael Summers, Commander, enlisted at Cape Town, Africa, 1883. Chilton, Texas.
- NOBLE, W. A., Private, Co. "E," 63rd Inf., Clantone's Brigade, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Montgomery, Ala., 1864. Marlin, Texas.
- NEWTON, R. W., Chaplain, 19th Inf., Strate's Brigade, Cheatham's Division, Cheatham's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Trenton, Tenn., 1861. Chilton, Texas.
- NEILL, J. C., Private, Co. "E," 27th Inf., Walthall's Brigade, Jackson's Division, Cheatham's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Carthage, Miss., March 20, 1862. Durango, Texas.
- NOBLE, J. R., Private, Co. "C," 4th Inf., Hood's Brigade, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V., enlisted in Texas. Stranger, Texas.
- NUNN, J. C., 1st Sgt., Co. "A," 38th Inf., Tennessee Army, enlisted in Alabama. Chilton, Texas.
- NETTLES, Dr. R. C., Color Sgt., Dr. L. A. McIntosh Bat., A.N.V. Army, enlisted in South Carolina. Marlin, Texas.
- NETTLES, W. T., Hood's Brigade, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V., enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- NEWBERRY, J. F., Private. Reagan, Texas.
- NEELEY, J. B., Private, Co. "I," Baylor Regiment, Green's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Grimes County, Texas. Odds, Texas.
- OWENS, J. T., 4th Sgt., Co. "B," Sies's Brigade, Johnston's Division, Picket's Corps, A.N.V., enlisted at Clarksville, Va., Aug. 26, 1862. Reagan, Texas.
- OWNEY, W. D., Private, Co. "D," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- OWENS, J. M., 2nd Sgt., "B," 22nd Bat., enlisted in Georgia.
- OWENS, JONES, enlisted in Va. Harlanville, Texas.
- OAKES, F. M., Private, Co. "B," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Marlin, Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- PRINGLE, I. J., 1st Sgt., Co. "E," 13th Regt., Barksdale's Brigade, McLaw's Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Alamutcha, Miss., 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- PERKINS, G. H., Corpl., Co. "B," 5th Texas Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Smith's Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- PIERSON, EDMUND, Private, Co. "A," Robertson's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Plantersville, Texas, May 8, 1864. Marlin, Texas.
- PIERSON, B. A., Sgt., Co. "A," 10th Inf., Granberry's Brigade, Claiborne's Division, Hardee's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Anderson, Texas, 1861. Viesca, Texas.
- PARSONS, DAVE, Private, Co. "C," 8th Texas Inf., Haw's Brigade, Walker's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Hempstead, Texas, April, 1862.
- PARSONS, S. L., Private, Co. "B," Waller's Bat., Walker's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, April, 1862. Marlin, Texas.

- PERKINS, E., Private, Co. "H," 20th Inf., Pettus' Brigade, Stevenson's Division, S. D. Lee's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Centerville, Ala., September, 1863. Travis, Texas.
- PRICE, W. T., Private, Co. "B," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Alto Springs, Texas, April 22, 1861. Stranger, Texas.
- PEYTON, A., Edgar's Bat., Echol's Brigade, A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Va. Reagan, Texas.
- PEOPLES, J. C., Capt., Co. "A," 2nd Inf., Pettigrew's Brigade, A. P. Hill's Div., A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Three Creeks, Ark., August, 1861. Oxidine, Texas.
- PRATHER, EDWARD, Private, Co. "F," Byron's Cav., Sibley's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Fairfield, Texas, Sept. 30, 1863. Crawford, Texas.
- POWELL, W. H., Private, Co. "C," 17th Inf., Forrest's Brigade, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Butler Co., Ala., Sept. 9, 1861. Lott, Texas.
- PHILLIPS, D. L., Private, Co. "I," 60th Inf., Gracie's Brigade, Bush & Johnson Division, Gordon's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Ft. Deposit, Ala., 1862. Riesel, Texas.
- PRATT, W. T., Sgt., Co. "K," 20th Inf., Walker's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Grimes County, Texas, 1861. Blevins, Texas.
- POTTINGER, J. W. Private, Co. "B," 2nd Cav., Jno. H. Morgan's Brigade, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Bowling Green, Ky., July, 1861. Durango, Texas.
- PRUETT, T. J., Private, Co. "A," 8th Cav., Harrison's Brigade, Wharton's Division, Wheeler's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Falls County, Texas, Sept., 1861. Reagan, Texas.
- POWERS, JOHN, Private, Co. "G," 22nd Inf., Featherson's Brigade, Loring's Division, Stuart's Corps, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Blackhawk, Miss., May, 1861. Waco, Texas.
- PARSONS, D. F., Private, Co. "C," 8th Texas, Haw's Brigade, Walker's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas.
- PRIEST, Dr. J. D. Surgeon, 20th Bat., enlisted in Lott, Texas.
- PERKINS, J. W., 2nd Lt., Co. "B," Waller's Bat., Green's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- PHILLIPS, E. T., 2nd Lt., Co. "E," Lowrey's Regt., Tennessee Army, enlisted in Mississippi. Lott, Texas.
- PIPER, PAUL, Private, Co. "H," 17th Inf., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Barclay, Texas.
- PARKER, J. P., Lt., Co. "B," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- PARKER, SAM, Private, Co. "B," Waller's Bat., Green's Brigade, H. Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- PRICE, ROBERT, Capt., Co. "B," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- POWELL, JOHN, Private, Co. "I," 26th Cav., Elmoore's Regt., Debray Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Huntsville, Texas. Chilton, Texas.
- PIERSON, JERRY, Private, Co. "B," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Huntsville.
- PACE, J. W., Private, Co. "E," Perrin's Bat., Ferguson's Brigade, Jackson's Div., Tenn. Army, enlisted in Mississippi, Nov., 1861. Cego, Texas.
- PAGE, A. T., Private, 45th Inf., Lowery's Brigade, Claiborn's Division, Tenn. Army, enlisted in Alabama. Eddy, Texas.
- PICKETT, J. T., Private, Co. "E," 1st Ala. Cav., Wheeler's Brigade, Bragg's Army, enlisted at Jacksonville, Ala., Nov., 1861. Oker, Texas.



- PARTON, A. A., Private, Co. "E," Jeff Davis Legions, Wade Hampton's Brigade, Stuart's Div., Virginia Army, enlisted at Linden, Ala., 1861. Shepherd, Texas.
- PEOPLES, J. W., Private, Co. "A," 34th Ala., Manigault's Brigade, Wither's Division, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Wetumka, Ala., March 20, 1862. Reagan, Texas.
- PEEVEY, J. C., enlisted in Col. McCullough's Regiment and after a year re-enlisted in Co. "C," Wald's Legion, was attached to armies of Generals Lee, Forrest and Shalmers, most of his service being scouting.
- QUARRLES, W. S., Private, Co. "D," 7th S. C. Regt., Kennedy's Brigade, Walthall's Div., Stuart's Corps, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Edgefield, S.C., 1864. Rosebud, Texas.
- REYNOLDS, JOHN, Private, Co. "E," 2nd Texas Inf., Moore's Brigade, Mawry's Division, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Hempstead, Texas, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- ROBERTSON, J. H., Private, Co. "H," 5th Fla. Inf., Perry's Brigade, Anderson's Div., Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Bristol, Fla., 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- REYNOLDS, A. C., 2nd Sgt., Co. "C," 8th Inf., Haw's Brigade, Walker's Div., Smith's Army, enlisted at Hempstead, Texas, April 8, 1862. Franklin, Texas.
- ROGERS, E. H., Private, Co. "A," 2nd Inf., Haw's Brigade, Walker's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Mt. Pleasant, Texas, 1862. Otto, Texas.
- REDDEN, H., Private, Co. "M," 1st Inf., Hood's Brigade, Walker's Div., Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V., enlisted at Sumpter, Texas, April, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- RICHIE, D. B., Corpl., Co. "B," Waller's Bat., Green's Brigade, Wharton's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- RATLIFF, J. A., Private, Co. "F," Magruder's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Falls County, Texas, May 1, 1862. Perry, Texas.
- RICHEY, H. E., Capt., Co. "I," Wirt Adam's Regt., Tenn. Army, enlisted at Mobile, Ala., Oct., 1861. Chilton, Texas.
- ROBERTSON, O. H., Co. "C," 29th Miss., Sear's Brigade, enlisted in Mississippi.
- ROBINSON, A., Co. "A," 8th Cav., Harrison's Brigade, Wheeler's Div., Tenn. Army, enlisted in Falls County, Texas, September 7, 1861. Reagan, Texas.
- RUSHIN, A. M., 1st Lt., Co. "G," 26th Inf., C. A. Evan's Brigade, Early & S Div., Ewell's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Valdosta, Ga., July, 1863. Mart, Texas.
- RICE, U. A., Capt., Co. "G," 48th Inf., A.N.V., enlisted at Marion, Ga., Spring of 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- RODDY, WM., Steamer Gaines, C. S. Navy, enlisted at Mobile, Ala., 1861. Perry, Texas.
- REEVES, J. R., Sgt., Co. "E," 3rd Cav., Wharton's Brigade, Wheeler's Division, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Walker Co., Ga., May 19, 1862. Elm Mott, Texas.
- ROGERS, J. T., Private, Co. "A," 7th Inf., Granbury's Brigade, Cleburne's Division, Hardee's Corps, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Waco, Texas, Sept. 18, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- ROGLAND, A., Private, Co. "I," 2nd Inf., Stafford's Brigade, Ewell's Div., Jackson's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Homer, La., 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- RICHARDS, J. B., Private, Co. "F," 7th Tenn. Cav., Rucker's Brigade, Forrest's Div., Tenn. Army, enlisted at Bell Station, Tenn., Nov., 1861. Durango, Texas.

- ROBERTS, F. B., Private, Scout, Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Falls County, Texas.
- RITTER, V. B., 2nd Sgt., Co. "H," 1st Cav., enlisted in Texas. McClanahan, Texas.
- RAY, J. S., 2nd Lt., Co. "L," 28th Inf., Tenn. Army, enlisted in Tenn. Marlin, Texas.
- ROGERS, R., Private, Co. "I," 9th Inf., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Dublin, Texas.
- REDDIN, H., Private, Co. "H," 1st Inf., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- RHODEN, W. M., Private, Co. "H," 1st Inf., enlisted in Georgia.
- RAINS, J. N., 1st Lt., 4th Inf., A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Virginia. Stranger, Texas.
- RODGERS, E., Private, Co. "A," 22nd Inf. enlisted in Texas.
- RHODES W. M., Private, Co. "H," 1st Inf., enlisted in Georgia. Travis, Texas.
- ROOKS, J. H., Private, Co. "K," 4th Tex. Inf., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Travis, Texas.
- RICHARDSON, SAM, enlisted in Titus County, Texas. Travis, Texas.
- ROGERS, W. J., Private, Co. "F," 34th Cav., Terrell's Brigade, Green's Div., Smith's Army, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Dallas, Texas. Hereford, Texas.
- REID, T. A., Corpl., Co. "K," 6th Tenn., Strang's Brigade, Cheatham's Corps, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Jackson, Tenn., May 15, 1861. Jackson, Tenn.
- SPENCER, H. F., Private, Co. "K," 14th Cav., McCausland's Brigade, J. A. Early's Div., A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Smithville, Va. Marlin, Texas.
- STUART, J. W., 2nd Sgt., Co. "H," Ferguson's Brigade, Jackson's Div., Wheeler's Corps, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Macon, Miss., April, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- SHAW, J. C., Private, Co. "F," 8th Ala. Cav., Pillow's Brigade, Wheeler's Div., enlisted at Pineville, Ala., March, 1864. Stranger, Texas.
- STALLWORTH, N., Major, 23rd Ala. Inf., Gracie's Brigade, Bushard Johnson's Div., Gordon's Corps, A.N.V., enlisted at Allenton, Ala., Feb. 9, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- SMITH, E., Major, 8th Texas Inf., Haw's Brigade, Walker's Div., Smith's Army, enlisted in Hempstead, Texas, April 8, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- SAUNDERS, H. G., Capt., Co. "F," Cav., Smith's Army, enlisted at Fairfield, Texas, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- SUTTON, J. M., Private, Co. "B," 15th Inf., Polignac's Brigade, Walker's Division, Moreton's Corps, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Falls County, Texas, April, 1861. Chilton, Texas.
- SEWALL, K., Private, Co. "G," 20th Tex. Inf., Harrison's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Waverly, Texas, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- SPENCER, T. C., Private, Co. "K," 14th Cav., Jenkins Brigade, J. E. B. Stuart's Division, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Abilene, Va., 1861. Palestine, Texas.
- SNEED, J. W., Private, Co. "C," 4th Inf., Hood's Brigade, Longstreet's Div., A. P. Hill's Corps, A.N.V. Army, Fort Sullivan, Texas, July 21, 1861. Rosebud, Texas.
- STOREY, J. B., Private, Co. "E," 20th Inf., Pettus' Brigade, Stevenson's Div., Tenn. Army, enlisted at Union, Ala., 1861. Durango, Texas.
- SHELTON, WM., Capt., Sharpshooters, Villipugue's Brigade, Earl Van Doon's Division, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Courthouse, Miss., March 27, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- SNELL, J. M., Co. "K," 4th Inf., Reynold's Brigade, enlisted in Ark.
- SIMONS, TOM S., Private, 7th Cav., Green's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Shelby Co., October 16, 1862. Stranger, Texas.



- SAXON, THOS. L., Private, Co. "E," 2nd Inf., Mowe's Brigade, Maury's Division, Hardee's Corps, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Galveston, Texas, September 5, 1861.
- SINGER, E. C., Captain, Singer's Service, Special Corps, A.N.V., enlisted at Port LaVaca, Texas, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- SEGREST, D. S. A., Private, Co. "B," 4th Inf., Law's Brigade, Hood's Div., Longstreet's Div., A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Tuskegee, Ala., April 1, 1861. Lott, Texas.
- SMITH, B. W., Private, Cav., Tenn. Army, enlisted at Amite Co., Miss. Mooreville, Texas.
- SMITH, D. L., Private, Co. "F," Cav., Morgan's Brigade, Tenn. Army, enlisted in Shelby, Co., October 16, 1862.
- STOREY, G. W., Private, Co. "A," 30th Cav., Gano's Brigade, Maxey's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Falls County, Texas, 1862. Durango, Texas.
- STALLWORTH, R. M., Private, Co. "B," Waller's Bat., Green's Brigade, Green's Div., Smith's Army, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Falls County, Texas, June, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- SHAW, J. D., 2nd Lt., Co. "C," 10th Inf., Granbury's Brigade, Cleburne's Div., Hardee's Corps, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Alvarado, Texas, May, 1861. Waco, Texas.
- SPARKS, S. F., Private, Co. "A," Sherman's Regt., Battle of San Jacinto, April 21, 1836, Houston's Army, enlisted at Nacogdoches, Texas, March, 1863. Rockport.
- STEVENSON, WALTER, Private, Co. "H," 13th Inf., Spight's Brigade, enlisted at Brenham, Texas, May 12, 1863. Harlanville, Texas.
- STONE, A. W., Private, Co. "E," 7th Inf., Gregg's Brigade, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Cherokee County, Texas, 1861. Groesbeck, Texas.
- STONE, B. M., 3rd Sgt., Co. "E," 6th Cav., Butler's Brigade, Kampton's Div., A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Belton, Texas, April 14, 1861. Gatesville, Texas.
- SCOTT, SIMON T., Private, Tenn. Army, enlisted in Alabama. Durango, Texas.
- SCOTT, SAM H., Private, Co. "O," Phillip's Legion, Tenn. Army, enlisted in Georgia. Travis, Texas.
- STAHL, A. F., Private, Co. "B," Waller's Battery, Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Marlin, Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- SNIDER, F. M., 1st Sgt., Co. "K," 18th Cav., enlisted in Texas. Kosse, Texas.
- SEARCY, I. G., Co. "D," 8th Inf., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Travis, Texas.
- STANTON, ROBERT, Private, Co. "D," 5th Inf., Hood's Brigade, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- SKEEN, W. S., Private, Co. "E," 24th Inf., enlisted in Mississippi. Marlin, Texas.
- SWINNEA, H. S., Private, Co. "B," 3rd Inf., Tenn. Army, enlisted in Tenn. Hillsboro, Texas.
- STALLWORTH, W. T., Private, 3rd Art., Benton's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Louisiana. Rosebud, Texas.
- SWINNEA, S. W., Private, Co. "A," 3rd Inf., Tennessee Army, enlisted in Tenn. Harlanville, Texas.
- SIMS, JOHN, enlisted in Alabama. Marlin, Texas.
- SIMS, JOE, enlisted in Alabama. Marlin, Texas.
- SCRUGGS, JESSE, 41st Alabama Reg., Capt. Herman Kenneworth, enlisted in Jackson County, Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- SWANN, J. J., enlisted in Georgia. Chilton, Texas.
- SPENCER, C. B., A.N.V., enlisted in Va. Marlin, Texas.
- STUART, F. D., enlisted in S. C. Durango, Texas.



- STROTHER, LUTHER, Private, Co. "I," 23rd Cav., Gould's Brigade, Magruder Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Tarrant County, Texas, March, 1863. Chilton, Texas.
- STEVENSON, J. W., Private, Co. "D," 4th Cav., Green's Brigade, Smith's Corps, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Durango, Texas, September, 1861. Cego, Texas.
- SLADE, T. W., Private, Co. "E," Jeff Davis Legion, Hampton's Brigade, Stuart's Div., Army of Virginia, enlisted at Linden, Ala., 1861. Shepherd, Texas.
- SINGLETON, JOHN, Private, Co. "C," 19th Inf., Pemberton's Div., Tenn. Army, enlisted at Lambertine, Ark. Reagan, Texas.
- STUART, E. C., Private, Co. "B," Waller's Bat., Hardiman's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- SHARP, HENRY, Private, Co. "G," 5th Texas Inf., Hood's Brigade, Heath's Division, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Cameron, Texas. Reagan, Texas.
- SCOGGIN, L. G., Major, 3rd Bat., Magruder's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- SMITH, J. W., Co. "I," enlisted in 1861. Bruceville, Texas.
- STONE, W. A., Private, Co. "E," 7th Tex. Inf., Granberry's Brigade, Cleburn's Div., Tenn. Army, enlisted at Rusk, Texas, Sept., 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- TAYLOR, J. B., 3rd Lt., Co. "I," 26th Cav., X. B. Debray's Brigade, Dick Taylor's Corps, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Huntsville, Texas, April, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- THOMPSON, GEORGE, Private, Co. "B," 5th Inf., Hardiman's Brigade, Green's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, April 22, 1862.
- TRAVIS, H., Corporal, Co. "F," 20th Texas Inf., Morgan's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Old Sterling, Texas, May 4, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- THOMPSON, T. G., Corporal, Co. "K," Lane's Cav., Major's Brigade, Greens' Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Smith Co., Texas, May, 1862.
- THOMPSON, J. M., Capt., Co. "G," 10th Cav., Ector's Brigade, Trench's Div., Polk's Corps, Tenn. Army, enlisted in Rusk Co., Texas, 1861. Wills Point, Texas.
- THOMAS, SAMUEL, Co. "E," Mulden's Regiment, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Mississippi. Sherman, Texas.
- TAYLOR, YOUNG, Private, Co. "E," McIntosh's Regiment, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Arkansas. Durango, Texas.
- TEAGLE, T. F., 1st Sgt., Stanton Art., A.N.V., enlisted in Va. Marlin, Texas.
- TOMLINSON, J. E., Private, Co. "B," Green's Regt., Sibley's Brigade, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, Sept., 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- TOMLINSON, WILL, Private, Co. "B," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Marlin, Texas, 1863. Marlin, Texas.
- TARQUINE, ALEXANDER, first enlisted in Whitefield's Legion and transferred to McMulty's Scouts. Marlin, Texas.
- THOMSON, P. V., Private, McMulty's Scouts, Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Div., Dick Taylor's Corps, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Falls County, Texas, 1861.
- TALLEY, P. T., Sgt., Co. "E," 17th Regt., Waltham's Div., Stuart's Corps, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Temple, Texas, 1861.

- UNDERWOOD, B. F., Private, Co. "A," 56th Inf., Ferguson's Brigade, S. D. Lee's Div., Tenn. Army, enlisted at Montgomery, Ala., 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- UNDERWOOD, JOE, Private, Co. "B," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas.
- VANN, J. E., Private, Co. "D," 2nd Cav., Armstrong's Brigade, Jackson's Div., Tenn. Army, enlisted at Coffeetown, Miss., 1863. Marlin, Texas.
- VENABLE, I. H., Private, Co. "K," 6th Inf., Battle's Brigade, Rhode's Div., Jackson's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Ala. Lott, Texas.
- VANHOOKS, J. L., Private, Co. "B," 2nd Miss., Davis Brigade, Heath's Div., Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Ripley, Miss., Feb. 5, 1861. Florado, Texas.
- WRENN, W. B., Private, Co. "A," 36th Inf., Clayton's Brigade, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Gainesville, Ala. Marlin, Texas.
- WARD, JOHN, 1st Lt., Co. "K," Cook's Art., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Marlin, Texas, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- WEBB, W. H., Private, Co. "F," 1st Inf., Walthall's Div., S. O. Lee's Corps, Tenn. Army, enlisted at Montgomery, Ala., Sept. 3, 1861. Stranger, Texas.
- WOOLEY, R. F., Co. "A," 28th Inf., Moulton's Brigade, Dick Taylor's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Sparta, La., May, 1862. Chilton, Texas.
- WILLIS, G. P., 1st Corpl., Co. "F," 21st Inf., Joe Davis Brigade, Heath's Div., A. P. Hill's Corps, A.N.V., enlisted at Hightown, Miss., 1861. Eddy, Texas.
- WARD, G. N., Private, Co. "B," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas. Reagan, Texas.
- WAITE, S. J., 1st Lt., Co. "C," 39th Inf., Villipege's Brigade, Tenn. Army, enlisted in Mississippi.
- WOODLAND, HENRY, Private, Co. "B," Walter's Bat., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas. Reagan, Texas.
- WIEBUSCH, GEORGE, Private, Co. "E," 2nd Cav., Green's Brigade, enlisted at San Antonio, Texas, Oct. 8, 1860.
- WATKINS, N. R., Private, Co. "C," 44th Inf., Shappe's Brigade, Hardiman's Div., Cheatham's Corps, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Pittsboro, Miss., Jan. 10, 1860. Lott, Texas.
- WATSON, T. B., Private, Co. "C," Elmote's Regt., Magruder's Corps, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Washington Co., Texas, 1862. Marlin, Texas.
- WOOLEY, J. M., Private, Co. "H," 9th Inf., Dick Taylor's Brigade, Dick Taylor's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Bienville, La., 1863. Lott, Texas.
- WILLSON, H. I., 2nd Lt., Co. "G," 22nd Inf., Hawes Brigade, Walker Div., Trans-Miss., enlisted at Rusk, Texas, 1862. Taylor, Texas.
- WALKER, W. M., Private, Co. "G," 60th Inf., Gordon's Brigade, Ewell's Div., Jackson's Corps, A.N.V., enlisted in Dooley Co., Ga., May, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- WARRICK, W., Private, Co. "F," 2nd Cav., Major's Brigade, Green's Division, Smith's Corps, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Upsher Co., Texas. Good, Texas.
- WOOTEN, WEEMS, Private, Co. "B," Inf., Ewell's Div., Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted at Prince Edward, Va., Sept., 23, 1863. Smithville, Texas.
- WOLF, JOHN B., Capt., Co. "I," 14th Ark., McNair's Brigade, Churchill's Div., Buckner's Corps, Army of Tenn., enlisted at Yellville, Ark., May, 1861. Cameron, Texas.

- WYNN, R. W., Private, Co. "A," Whitfield's Legion, Ross' Brigade, W. H. Jackson's Division, S. D. Lee's Corps, Tenn. Army, enlisted in Rusk, Texas, 1862. Kilgore, Texas.
- WATKINS, A. B., Private, Co. "B," 43rd Inf., Gracie's Brigade, Johnston's Div., Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V., enlisted at Marengo Co., Ala., Feb., 1862. Wilderville, Texas.
- WORTHY, A. P., Private, Co. "E," 28th Cav., Mayberry's Brigade, Forrest's Div., Tenn. Army, enlisted at Williamsburg, Miss., 1862. McClanahan, Texas.
- WUNSCH, F., Private, Davis Co., Eng. Dept., enlisted in Texas.
- WILLIAMS, G. W., Private, Co. "F," 5th Cav., Green's Brigade, Hardiman's Div., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas.
- WHITE, H. K., Captain, Co. "H," 9th Cav., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- WIGGINS, W. T., Private, Cook's Art., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Dott, Texas.
- WARD, F., Private, Co. "I," enlisted in Alabama.
- WATSON, A. E., Private, Co. "G," 4th Inf., Hood's Brigade, Longstreet's Corps, A.N.V. Army, enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- WATERS, J. W., 3rd Sgt., Co. "A," 18th Inf., Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted in Texas. Marlin, Texas.
- WALLACE, A. D., Color Sgt., 6th Battle's Brigade, Rhode's Div., Jackson's Corps, A.N.V., enlisted in Ala., May 5, 1861. Rosebud, Texas.
- WILSON, H., Private, Co. "B," 5th Tex. Cav., Green's Brigade, Wharton's Division, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, 1861. Estacada, Oregon.
- WHEAT, J. D., Private, Co. "D," 18th Texas Cav., Granbury's Brigade, Clayburn's Division, Johnston's Corps, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Belton, Texas, 1861. Temple, Texas.
- WADE, J. H., 1st Lt., Co. "H," Ala. Cav., Allen's Brigade, Wheeler's Division, Tennessee Army, enlisted at Montgomery, Ala., June, 1861. Marshall, Texas.
- YOUNG, H. G., Private, Co. "B," 5th Texas Cav., Hardiman's Div., Green's Corps, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at Marlin, Texas, April 22, 1861. Marlin, Texas.
- YATES, W. B., Co. "H," 16th Cav., Walker's Brigade, Trans-Miss. Army, enlisted at McKinney, Texas, April 23, 1862. Cameron, Texas.
- YATES, W. T., Capt., 40th Inf., Walker's Brigade, Tennessee Army, enlisted in Mississippi. Kosse, Texas.

(Editor's note: The above list of Confederate Veterans is the only one in existence, as far as known. It was, presumably, prepared through interviews with veterans or their families and, perhaps, a few errors may have been made — errors which could not be corrected in 1946.)

**CONFEDERATE VETERANS ORGANIZE.** Records to prove when the Confederate veterans were organized into the "Willis L. Lang Camp of Confederate Veterans" were not available. It is known that the Camp was active when the Old Settlers Association was organized in 1908



and the minutes of the latter association show that the Willis L. Lang Camp was united with it in 1909 to form the Old Settlers and Confederate Veterans Association. (Later the word, "Confederate," was deleted, so that the name is (1946) "Old Settlers and Veterans Association.")

**UNITED DAUGHTERS OF THE CONFEDERACY ORGANIZE.** Soon after organization of the Confederate veterans, a Chapter of the United Daughters of the Confederacy was organized and the organization also was active for many years. A chapter is active in Rosebud (1946) and Mrs. W. G. Robertson of that city is (1946) president for Texas Division of the United Daughters of the Confederacy.

Through the efforts of the United Daughters of the Confederacy, Memorial Cabin was built on the northeast corner of the court house square about 1925. The Cabin was built of logs, taken from historic pioneer houses of Falls County, hauled to the Square and converted into a spacious building. (The building was used for headquarters for Boy Scouts, temporary offices for county officials, when the 1939 court house was under construction, and in 1946 as headquarters for the Girl Scouts. Its care is under supervision of a committee, the Reverend F. P. Goddard, Miss Mae Hutchings, Mrs. Dal Pottinger, Mrs. Jane Harlan, and Miss Vera Warrock.) The Cabin was built under supervision of a committee, Mrs. P. S. Summers, president of the UDC at the time, Mrs. C. R. Eddins, Mrs. R. W. Phillips, and Miss Mae Hutchings.

About the same time Memorial Cabin was built, the United Daughters of the Confederacy assumed responsibility for construction on the square, near Memorial Cabin, of a granite Memorial in honor of the Confederate veterans. Mrs. B. C. Clark had presented the UDC Chapter with a sum of money and the Chapter voted the Memorial would be the most appropriate investment of the gift, for lasting benefit and memory.

Inscribed on the east side of the Memorial stone (facing the side-walk) is:



A Token of  
Appreciation to the  
Valor and Sacrifice  
of the  
CONFEDERATE  
SOLDIERS

1861

1865

Inscribed on the  
west side is:

Erected by the  
United Daughters  
Of the Confederacy  
Of Marlin, Texas  
A. D. 1925

According to available information, the local United Daughters of the Confederacy, originally, was called the "Willis L. Lang Chapter of the United Daughters of the Confederacy" and, later, the name was changed to the "John M. Jolly Chapter of the United Daughters of the Confederacy." Mr. Jolly was a distinguished Confederate veteran, commander of the Willis L. Lang Camp of Confederate Veterans and an active citizen of Falls County.





## CHAPTER IX

### Confusion During Reconstruction

**CONFEDERATE VETERANS HEAD FOR HOME.** After the end of the War Between the States, the Soldiers of the Grey were undergoing a great emotional crisis. Home discomforts and discouragements, also, were widespread. The old, the women and children were under-nourished and suffering from illness and disease, because of over-work and lack of medicines. They had worked day and night to maintain their home-life—their farming and business—and, at the same time provide essentials for their men in the army.

Texas swarmed with hungry veterans. Lawless elements were wide-spread and civil authorities were unable to cope with them. Deeds of violence in many parts of the State were common. Flight of many of the principal officers of the State—seeking to avoid victorious Unionists—added to the confusion.

**PRESIDENT LINCOLN TRIED TO HELP.** President Lincoln had formulated plans for restoration of the seceded States to their places in the Union as quickly as possible. Radical congressmen had done their utmost to prevent it, pleading that he abandon his humane policy and to treat the South as a conquered province, or as a traitor. Lincoln was firm, declaring, it is said, "It would not be right in the sight of God to bring all this misery to the South. The United States cannot be preserved by such ungodly measures." One Congressman sneeringly replied, "What had God to do with it? Aren't we running the government?" to which the president replied, after a brief, meditated silence, "I wonder—I wonder what would have happened, if Pickett had charged an hour earlier at Gettysburg? I wonder what would have happened if the Monitor had been a day later getting to

Hampton Roads? I wonder what would have happened if Albert Sidney Johnson had not been killed at Shiloh?"

President Lincoln's plans, however, were interrupted by his assassination on April 14, 1865, a few days after General Lee had surrendered. His plans had already been initiated and his successor, Andrew Johnson, a Southerner and a Democrat, who, though, he had opposed secession, understood the problems of the South, tried earnestly to carry them through. Unfortunately, he lacked tact and did not hold the confidence of Congress, particularly the radical elements, who did not like anything Southern, or Democratic.

**SUMMARY OF EVENTS.** About the middle of June, 1865, eighteen hundred United States soldiers arrived in Texas and the State went under military command. Two days previously, A. J. Hamilton had been appointed provisional governor by President Johnson, but he did not reach Texas until July 25th. Though a Texan, Hamilton had opposed secession and had been a general in the Union army. Before the war he had served as Attorney General and Congressman of Texas. As chief executive, working under the prevailing conditions, he won the gratitude of most people, but confusion increased with the freeing of ignorant slaves, unprepared for freedom. Conflicts between the loyal Confederates and Unionists, some of whom were radical, brought a general economic paralysis.

Governor Hamilton's duty was to register as voters those who would take the oath of allegiance to the Union. (The commissioners court minutes of Falls County record that numbers of the County's leaders took the oath after 1866.) Early in January, 1866, delegates were elected to a convention, aimed to nullify the secession ordinance, provide for emancipation of the Negroes in Texas, determine their civil rights, and to repudiate state debts incurred in support of the war. There were, of course, other purposes of the convention.

Less than half the qualified voters took part in the election. The Convention met and was composed of three groups, confirmed Confederates, radical Unionists

and conservatives. The conservatives were intent upon getting things adjusted as quickly as possible and ending the confusion. In general they controlled the convention. The changes presented to the people afterwards were not seriously objectionable to Southern pride.

J. W. Throckmorton, a conservative, who had served in the Confederate Army, became Governor, winning over Pease by a vote of 4 to 1. When he and the new legislators took office, President Johnson proclaimed the insurrection over and appealed for nationwide peace, order and devotion to reconstruction. By early 1867, the government of Texas was more stable than since Sam Houston was deposed in 1861.

But more trouble was brewing. In the U. S. Congressional election of 1866, more radicals were elected to Congress and were in position to defy the President. Senators and Congressmen from the South were denied their seats. Southern states were divided into military districts and Texas again came under military command. Immediately, General Sheridan, in command, deposed Governor Throckmorton as "an impediment to the reconstruction" and appointed E. M. Pease, who had been defeated by Throckmorton by four to one. Pease was not a radical and conserved Texas' interest as best he could.

Another convention was called which was made up almost entirely of radicals. E. J. Davis, a native of Florida, who had served as district judge in Texas, but who commanded a Texas Army of Unionists in the war, was elected president of the convention. Dominated by ultra-radicals, the convention made a record for wasting money and doing little. Even, some of the Negro delegates resigned because the convention had lost "all regard for dignity and honor." The convention broke up February 9, 1869, without completing its work.

However, the constitution of 1869 was framed by this body. Not long after a brief hectic era, this constitution was abandoned.

U. S. Grant was inaugurated President of the United States in March, 1869. Late the same year E. J. Davis



was elected governor of Texas. Radical groups in Texas and at Washington had left nothing undone to assure Davis' election. Democrats became disgusted and most of them failed to vote. Conducted by the military, the election was featured with many irregularities. During the campaign, Governor Pease resigned in disgust. After Davis was declared elected by a majority of 900 votes (more than a month after the election), Davis immediately assumed office.

Apparently, Davis and other Texas officials satisfied the radical elements of Congress, for on March 30th, 1870, Texas was readmitted to the Union and General Reynolds transferred civil authority to "officers elected by the people."

Meanwhile, in the confusion, ignorant Negroes, not knowing how to use their new freedom, further confused economic conditions by failing to work, looking to the government for "forty acres and a mule" or something else and controlled by radicals. They thrust themselves obnoxiously into activities where they were of no use, or actual hindrances. The Ku Klux Klan showed up in Texas, although, apparently, not connected with similar organizations east of the Mississippi. The Texas bands existed briefly and were about the only means the white people had of making it known they had a few rights in the land. The bands depended for effect by appealing to the superstitions of the Negroes, more than upon violence.

**CONFUSION IN FALLS COUNTY.** Falls County had furnished several hundred men in the War Between the States and many of them had lost their lives. Many came back nursing wounds and disabilities. All found their families, too, had endured untold hardships and anxieties.

Tax rolls at the State Comptroller's office in Austin show that Falls County people rendered 1,654 slaves for taxes in 1861. A few more came from other States, brought by owners seeking to have them as far away from the battle areas as possible, and, perhaps, save them, if worst came to worst, by taking them to Mexico.

**SLAVES, GENERALLY, ORDERLY.** It is generally known that the slaves in the county were orderly and faithful during the conflict. Only minor irregularities were known, and most of them were efforts to escape. As far as known, no extreme agitators worked among them, although extremists and schemers came later.

**PROSPECTS WITHIN THE COUNTY.** Although Texas contributed greatly to the Confederate Cause, fortunately, it suffered least, because it was away from the battle areas. Except for a few battles in Texas, most of the fighting was done elsewhere. The people, even enjoyed comparable prosperity during the war, because they sent food and supplies to the army, for which they were paid. However, Confederate money was not very stable and, later, that that remained in the hands of the people was worthless.

Falls County, too, was fortunate in being far from battle zones. Its people were comparatively prosperous, although their farms were neglected, because so many of its men were away. Its women, children, slaves and other workers worked long hours during the emergency.

The County found it had lost many of its finest male citizens in the war. Those who returned, courageously and with determination, set to work rebuilding confidence in themselves and in the County, at large. The number of "Carpet-baggers" and "Radicals" to cause embarrassments and anxieties was small, but those who came left unpleasant memories.

**THE E. J. DAVIS "REGIME."** The height of confusion in Texas, perhaps, came under the so-called "E. J. Davis Regime." Davis went in as governor late in 1869, after Governor E. M. Pease, another Unionist, though more conservative, had resigned in disgust, because of irregularities in the radical election campaign. With Davis as governor, the radicals, carpet-baggers and those who did not understand either Southern people or the Negroes, were in their heyday. In their spurious designs,

they even had the support of the federal army, much of which in Texas was composed of Negro soldiers, unaware of what was going on or that they were, perhaps, tools in designing hands.

Among those brought into power under the Davis Regime was District Judge J. W. Oliver, who held court in several Central Texas counties, including Falls County. To uphold his "authority and order," Judge Oliver had the assistance of federal troops, most of whom were uneducated Negroes.

**JUDGE OLIVER HOLDS COURT.** In the 1870's, in Falls County, as in all of Texas, feelings ran high, because the veterans of the War Between the States and their friends had been penalized for various reasons. At a June Nineteenth celebration of Negroes, two white men became involved in a controversy over an article which had been published in a Marlin newspaper of that day, "The Moving Ball." Details of the controversy are not important as were the results, following.

In October, following the celebration, the men met on the steps over the fence around the court house square and, after an exchange of words, one drew a gun, fired and wounded the other slightly. Feelings had already been incited because of misunderstandings of the Negroes and schemes of the radicals and a rout seemed in the making. Already there were smouldering resentments against Judge Oliver, the Negro soldiers and the judge's high-handed lack of observance of legal procedure.

The judge spoke to an agitated crowd milling about the court house, and threatened to call upon the soldiers to take over the situation. The soldiers, of course, were chiefly Negroes and radicals, knowing or caring little about legal procedure.

**CALM THINKING PEOPLE AROUSED.** This was more than Fall's County's calm-thinking people could stand. J. D. Oltorf, an attorney, who arrived in the county



in 1854, snatched a shot-gun (almost from nowhere), ran to the east door of the old cedar court house, flourished it meaningly and exclaimed, "I'll shoot the first — soldiers, or anybody else, who tries to force something upon the free people of this county!"

This was witnessed by people who lived until a few years ago, and all of them reported that immediately Judge Oliver's attitude changed. He reversed his threat, pleaded for harmony and Mr. Oltorf's words, together with his dramatic outburst, had their effect.

The crisis passed. Later a group of men were called before Judge Oliver's court to account for their part in the disturbance and were released with light, if any, penalty. Incidentally, the same J. D. Oltorf appeared before the Court and said, "Your Honor, let these other men go. I assume responsibility for what happened — and will do it again under similar circumstances."



**J. D. OLTORF**  
(He served as County, or District, Attorney in Falls County during reconstruction times.)

**JUDGE OLIVER OUTWITTED.** In "Memories of the Hills and Home of Countryside" by Tom L. McCullough, descendant of one of the early settlers of Mooreville, is this account illustrating the antics of Judge Oliver and the spirit of the radicals. It is published by permission of Mr. McCullough, who lives in Dallas.

"Even in Falls County, the monstrous effrontery of the carpet-bagger seriously challenged the peace and order of society. Judge J. W. Oliver of Waco was a 'carpet-bag' judge of the Reconstruction period and was generally called a Radical. Honorable E. J. Davis was provisional governor of Texas by federal appointment and Judge J. W. Oliver was stationed at Waco, having under his jurisdiction quite a number of Central Texas counties, including McLennan, Falls and Limestone. He was allowed a liberal contingent of soldiers or militia

and these were usually illiterate Negroes, who liked to wear a blue uniform and carry a gun. These attended his court and executed his orders, not only in judicial matters but in many other matters of administration, of tax assessment and collections, as well as in political activities. Judge Oliver was of keen intellect but of overbearing and unscrupulous methods of domination of the people and the province. While the Legislature provided for his compensation and the maintenance of the militia, he repeatedly required the sheriff to secure for him substantial amounts in cash, ranging as big as \$1,200 at times and he would direct the sheriff to present his bill for reimbursement to the county commissioners as an expense of the local administration.

"While holding his court at Marlin he directed the sheriff to secure \$1,200 for immediate use and upon protest of the sheriff to secure that sum, the sheriff was told that he must get the money and to present a claim therefor to the Commissioners Courts of Falls County. At that time the commissioners of Falls County were George J. Elam of Marlin, Charlie T. Barclay, W. G. Etheridge and Ed McCullough of Mooreville.

"At the succeeding term of the Commissioners Court, while Judge Oliver was holding his District Court in that place, he personally called upon the Commissioners Court, inquired why they had not approved the sheriff's claim for refund of \$1,200. He was told that they would attend to that matter before they adjourned. He warned them that if they adjourned without approving that claim he would put them all in jail for contempt of court.

"While Judge Oliver was gone to lunch the commissioners had their horses saddled and tied at the hitching-racks near the court house. The commissioners took their books and records to the vault, closed the Court without approving the sheriff's claim, ran to their horses and took to the tall timbers of Brazos bottoms. Having defied Judge Oliver, he returned in a few days to his Court in Waco, where he demanded an allowance of the McLennan County Commissioners Court on similar claims.

**JUDGE OLIVER IN JAIL — FOR LUNACY.** "The Commissioners Court at Waco consisted of Judge O. H. Leland, who was afterwards postmaster there and whom the writer knew personally. The other county commissioners were J. Wood, I. B. Trice, S. M. Johnson and J. W. Hill. The sheriff was W. H. Morris. The McLennan County Commissioners Court having likewise defied radical Judge Oliver, he put them in the McLennan county jail for contempt, and while so confined they conferred together and signed and swore to a charge of lunacy against Judge Oliver and dropped it from the window of the jail; caused it to be filed with the clerk and a writ issued for the arrest of Judge Oliver on a charge of lunacy. This warrant of arrest was served by a young officer, John Moore, now deceased, son of Dr. Thomas D. Moore and a brother of Luke, Bart, Tom and James I. Moore of early Waco. When this officer placed Judge Oliver in the same jail, he requested a conference with the commissioners, who were inmates of the same institution, and they arrived at an agreement by which all were liberated and peace was restored."

Thus wrote Mr. McCullough of an experience of his father with Judge Oliver.

**CONFUSION OF ELECTIONS.** Judge Oliver and his soldiers wanted to make sure when elections were held, the advantages would be with the regime in power — meaning his. This incident was told by older people who witnessed it. It is regretted the earlier citizens and Confederate veterans did not make memoranda of their experiences, so that other generations might have them for the record.

An election was held in Marlin at the time Judge Oliver and his soldiers were here. Already opposition to the E. J. Davis regime was mounting and, presumably, Judge Oliver was determined to have Falls County "loyal" to the regime. In the election referred to, the voting place in Marlin was the Bartlett building (now Marlin's City Hall). It was "protected" by soldiers under orders of Judge Oliver "to assure a fair and im-



partial election." Through two rows of soldiers, most of whom were Negroes, voters were about to pass to cast their ballots.

Some of the county's leaders saw through the scheme, which was to intimidate some voters and encourage others. They saw the gross injustice to fair-minded people and remonstrated, taking their appeal to Judge Oliver. The judge was adamant and insisted the soldiers were necessary for a "fair election." Some of the citizens walked quietly away and, one by one, returned and, unobserved, mounted the roof of the court house, armed with rifles and pistols. From their position they held a commanding view of the voting place.

By prearrangement, a few citizens, including J. D. Oltorf, an attorney, called upon Judge Oliver and asked that the soldiers be withdrawn. The judge insisted they were necessary and offered explanations—much to the exasperation of the citizens. Mr. Oltorf, after listening patiently, replied calmly in words to this effect: "All right, Judge, if you persist in keeping the soldiers there, somebody is going to get hurt, perhaps killed. It is not known who will be the first to get killed, but you'll be the second!"

The bold action produced the desired result. The judge realized he was dealing with people whose tempers had been imposed upon too long. He withdrew the soldiers—and the election proceeded peacefully.

**JUDGE OLIVER REMOVES COUNTY CLERK.** Another example of the high-handed methods of the judge was the removing from office in 1870 of the county clerk, Moses Henry Curry. Mr. Curry had served as First Lieutenant of a company of Confederate soldiers in the war and had been elected county clerk and was serving. For an unsubstantiated cause, he was summarily removed in 1871 by Judge Oliver and the Davis Regime. It is not known the trumped-up cause, but it was generally conceded it was because Mr. Curry was a Confederate veteran and of political beliefs adverse to those of the judge. Mr. Curry's removal created more wide-spread dissatisfaction and indignation in the county. (Later,

after Judge Oliver's time, Mr. Curry was re-elected county clerk and served two terms. He was an active member of the Masonic Lodge, a zealous churchman and Sunday School superintendent of the First Baptist Church of Marlin for more than twenty-five years.)

**OLIVER ASKED TO RESIGN.** Among the private papers of the late J. M. Kennedy, founder and publisher of *The Marlin Democrat* for fifty-two years, was found a copy of a petition, asking Judge Oliver to resign, because his "usefulness as judge of this district is destroyed." The petition was signed by members of the Falls County bar and, also, members of the Limestone County bar. Unfortunately, it does not show date it was presented. It is as follows:

"Hon. J. W. Oliver, Sir:—We hand you herewith, a communication from the members of the bar of the thirty-third Judicial District, soliciting you for reasons therein stated, to resign the judgeship of said District. The Unanimity evinced by this paper, we hope, will secure for its serious consideration, and produce in your mind the conviction deeply rooted in ours, that the best interest of the bar and people of the District, will be prompted and subserved by a compliance on your part with this request.

(Signed)

Very respectfully,

Richard Coke,  
T. P. Aycock,  
L. W. Goodrich,  
E. J. Gurley,  
B. B. Clarkson.

The petition accompanying the letter, and handed to Judge Oliver in a body, reads as follows:

Hon. J. W. Oliver, Sir:—The members of the bar subscribing their names thereto, would respectfully represent, that events have occurred in the 33rd Judicial District since your appointment to office, which have rendered you unpopular as a Judge and as a man, with the people of the District and with the members of the bar; that they no longer have in you the confidence necessary to be reposed in one in your position, and that this unpopularity and want of confidence is so universal, and so deeply felt that the prospect of your future usefulness, as Judge in this District, is destroyed.

We have felt it our duty to inform you of these facts, and while painful, we believe it just to yourself, to ourselves, and to the people of the District, to say further, that your resignation would afford satisfaction to us, to them, and restore confidence in the administration

of the laws through the Courts. We, therefore, present this as our petition to you, based upon the belief of the good results that would follow, requesting for these results, the sacrifice of your position by resigning it.

Very respectfully,

(Signed) W. R. Reagan, B. B. Clarkson, B. F. Gassaway, Thomas Harrison, B. L. Aycock, Chas. A. Jennings, L. W. Goodrich, J. R. McDonald, J. D. Oltorf, E. J. Gurley, F. H. Sleeper, E. A. Jones, J. T. Dizon, Thos. Moore, Wm. L. Prather, E. H. Graham, George Clark, E. A. McKinney, W. M. Flourney, J. F. Davis, L. C. Alexander, C. B. Pearre, W. B. Forde, Richard Coke, Thos. P. Aycock, S. C. Buck, B. W. Rimes, T. D. Williams, W. C. Smith, J. W. Speight, D. A. Kelley, J. M. Norris, G. B. Gerald, J. C. West, N. W. Battle, John T. Flint, M. D. Herring, G. J. Buck, W. H. Jenkins, R. W. Davis, A. J. Evans, J. M. Anderson.

The following persons authorized their names to be signed, after the petition had been presented. Their names did not appear on the petition, at the time of its presentation, because the telegraph wires were down and they could not be communicated with. They compose the bar of Limestone County:

D. M. Pendegrast, L. J. Farrer, J. H. Smoot, Thos. J. Gibson, John A. Harrington, R. A. Davis.

**END OF RADICALISM.** There is no evidence to show that the petition of members of the bar of Falls and Limestone Counties brought results. Records at the Falls County district clerk's office show that Oliver held office from January 1, 1870, to January 1, 1873. In 1872 the Democrats got control of the Legislature and, perhaps, he went out the following year, as a result of that victory. In the fall of 1873 the Democrats backed Richard Coke for governor and he was elected by 85,549 votes to 42,663 for Davis, running for re-election.

Davis, and those who backed him, did not accept defeat without continued struggle. Although his opponent had won by almost two to one, Davis refused to surrender his office, called upon the military to sustain him in office. President U. S. Grant had given him the equivalent of orders to "yield to the verdict of the people," but Davis assembled a body of Negro troops in the lower floor of



the Capitol to prevent a meeting of the Legislature. The Democrats took possession of the upper floor and in the midst of the confusion, Davis called out the local militia company, but the company marched to stand guard on the second floor for the inauguration of the duly elected governor, Richard Coke. Davis sent new appeals for federal aid and Austin with filled with excited, armed men. It was difficult to restrain them from attacking the Negro militia. Finally on January 17, 1874, having received a third refusal of federal assistance, Davis retired without taking final leave. The E. J. Davis regime was over and Newton and Gambrell's "A Social and Political History of Texas" recorded, "A close student of this period of Texas history wrote, 'E. J. Davis and his radical associates succeeded only in plunging the Republican Party in Texas into irretrievable ruin.'"

**SPOKE WELL OF JUDGE OLIVER'S FAMILY.** To the E. J. Davis regime belonged District Judge J. W. Oliver, who brought unpleasantness to Falls County, never to be forgotten. The people were relieved when he was gone.

Tom L. McCullough of Dallas, in "Memories of the Hills and Homes of Countryside," wrote, "As a young law student at Waco, the writer (Mr. McCullough) boarded in the home of the widow of Judge Oliver, where she and her daughter, Mollie, cared for a number of women and I hold pleasant memories of them. Of course, we never discussed those past events."

**NEGROES ORDERLY.** Throughout the reconstruction period, the free Negroes, generally, remained orderly in Falls County. There had been no great animosities engendered between the whites and the blacks, because slave-owners and slaves understood each other. Frequently, there was deep affection between them. As far as known, there were no cruel and unfair slave-owners here. They realized their responsibilities to the slaves and treated them accordingly.

Most of the Negroes continued to work for their masters. A. P. Tomlinson said Churchill Jones, one of

the largest slave-owners, provided land for his ex-slaves, either giving it to them outright, or selling it to them on very easy terms.

Again, it is widely regretted there are no comprehensive records to show how the slaves fared after they were free in Falls County. They had been responsibilities of their masters and were really unprepared for freedom. They faced their new life in a practical way and, after fully aware of the consequences of the Emancipation Act, went to work, as best they knew, to improve their destinies. They have made progress.

**NEGROES IN POLITICS.** During the Reconstruction naturally the votes of Negroes were appealed to in many and, sometimes, unholy ways. They were given many wild and impractical promises by "carpet-baggers" and schemers, most of whom were more interested in personal profit than the welfare of the Negroes. Most of the Negroes, however, with confidence in their "white folks," remained loyal and were good citizens.

For a long time, even to the 1890's, intense rivalry over the Negro vote existed. The votes of the Negroes were to be reckoned with, since most of them followed leaders. There arose a general adverse feeling against them, because of this — a feeling, which perhaps, lingers to the present (1946).

Conservative thinking people did not lay all the blame for the evils at the feet of the Negroes.

The commissioners court records show that Nelson Denson, a Negro, was elected Falls County commissioner and served on the Court. His services were satisfactory, despite the prejudices of the day. Later, Denson was elected alderman of the city of Marlin, but refused to serve "in the interest of harmony."

As late as the 1890's confusion in the Negro school system resulted from unpreparedness of the Negroes to build their own school system. The late Falls County school superintendent, A. W. Eddins, wrote that at one time "sale and barter" was rife in the Negro schools. He wrote that Negro teachers were well paid, but "two

or three other important persons (trustees and white 'friends') had to be fixed before a school teaching contract" was arranged. Sometimes, several contracts were presented for the same school and controversies arose. Often when a Negro teacher received his voucher for his salary, he was accompanied to the bank (or met there) by trustees and sometimes, white people "to collect" — on a note, debt, or even for a loan.

Another evidence of the inefficiency and profiteering, the Superintendent recorded, was "many of the Negro teachers lived in the towns, several miles from where they taught, and would drive out daily to their schools. As a result schools began late and turned out early." The teachers held their jobs through bribery, or the intricacies of politics. In the curricula little emphasis was placed upon the doctrine of the dignity of work, the Superintendent wrote.

Falls County's problems with the Negroes were not extreme and the white people, as a whole, cooperated to help them make the most of their opportunities. A few Negroes thrust themselves forward, impolitely, and prematurely, without respect to social aesthetics.





# CHAPTER X

## End of the Pioneer Life

**NEW PEOPLE ARRIVE AFTER THE WAR.** After the great War, people of many areas of the South, even the North and East, looked to Texas for new opportunities — to forget their misfortunes and build new lives. They had heard of the rich, virgin soil of Texas and the ease with which they could buy a farm and be protected under Texas Homestead Laws. There was a new influx of people to Texas and many arrived in Falls County. The census shows that there were 3,614 people in the county in 1860. By 1870, the population had increased to 9,851 and, by 1880, to 16,520 — and people were still coming. Within twenty-five years after the War Between the States, the population of the county had increased more than four to one. Only a few came with views of capitalizing upon the misfortunes of the people. Those who remained became noble citizens, joining hands with people already in the county to build a better civilization.

**EARLY TRANSPORTATION.** During the war and for a long time afterwards, Texas depended upon oxen, wagons, horses and mules and stage coaches for transportation. Early Falls County commissioners labored to establish and improve roads in what was still a virtual wilderness. Progress was slow, but new roads were "surveyed," wooden bridges built and fording places and ferries established on the river and other sizeable streams.

Stage lines were in operation, with routes both short and long. Several of note passed through the county. One crossed the western half, running north and south near Durango. (Durango, perhaps, sprang up on a stage line at "the cross roads.") Another ran nearer the river, through Golinda, from Port Sullivan to Waco and other points. Another ran north and south on the

east side, passing through Alto Springs, early health and bathing resort, thence to Tehuacana and elsewhere. At Alto Springs, at a stage coach inn, Sam Houston lodged at one time and the house (standing in 1946) became known as the "Sam Houston House." (Citizens of Alto Springs have instituted plans to preserve it for posterity.) Stage lines ran through Marlin and one from the south stopped at an early inn at the present northeast corner of Coleman and Winter streets. Mrs. William McComb, direct descendant of two early families (Fortune and Killebrew) recalled she went to school (private) at the home of Mrs. Bates and at Mrs. Bates', stage drivers stopped for their meals, then continued northwestward to the river at Rockdam and to Waco, via the present town of Satin. The Bates' home and stage stop was known as "Bates' Hill." It was about a mile north of Marlin and at the place where Mrs. W. W. Neumann's home stands (1946).

In addition to stage lines, well known roads came into existence, bearing such names as "Belton Road," "Springfield Road," "Houston Road," "Cameron Road," "Millican Road," "Robertson County Road," "Bell - Falls Road," "Durango Road," "Mooreville Road," "Bald Hill Road," "Parsons Bridge Road," "Odds Road" and numerous others, names of which appear in the Commissioners Court records. Some of the earlier roads were winding, with sharp turns to avoid farms, bogs, and marshes, or to approach streams advantageously for crossing. The early pioneers did not visualize an age of machine transportation and speed. Safety was not considered important, for they lived in an age of adventure and daring — and travel was slow.

**THE COUNTY'S FIRST RAILROAD.** Before the War Between the States only one or two railroads were in operation in Texas — and they were for short distances. One of the first (if not, the first) to serve the Falls County area was seventy-five to a hundred miles to the south at Millican. Millican was the terminal of a line extending northwards from Houston. It became a distributing point, in the decade preceding 1870, for an area about



two hundred miles in diameter. Early people of Falls County traveled the long, laborious trip to Millican for essentials they could not produce at home, including salt, special food, household goods, and farm tools. Trips were made at intervals, and planned with care, since they required great endurance and risk.

After the middle 1860's, the railroad was extended northward and the towns of Bremond, Kosse, and others came into existence. In 1870, Falls County got its first railroad. It was called the "Waco Tap," which was an extension from Bremond to Waco of the line from Houston through Bremond, Kosse and Dallas. Later it was known as the Houston and Texas Central and ultimately, the Southern Pacific.

J. A. Martin, former citizen of Marlin, who lived at Waco about 1870, was appointed assistant engineer for construction of the line from Marlin to Waco. After locating the route from Marlin to Waco, he became engineer of construction, a position he held until 1871, when the "Waco Tap" was passed to control of the Houston and Texas Central. Mr. Martin lived in Marlin many years after the railroad came.

It was not possible in 1946 to get details of construction of the road, since early citizens could not be interviewed and railroad officials were unable to furnish them. Embro Norwood, ex-slave, of more than ninety, said in 1946 he worked for the railroad when it was under construction and recalled that trains ran from Bremond to Marlin for some time before the line was completed. He said he was present when the first train arrived from Bremond and a large crowd gathered to see it — "the first they had every seen." He recalled there was considerable wonder and excitement and related that a "white lady, driving a fine pair of horses hitched to a fine buggy, drove up after the train had stopped, marveled at it, and, observing its characteristic puffing, exclaimed, "Gee! I bet that thing IS tired, after pulling that load all the way from down at Bremond." There was no station and freight and baggage were piled in heaps along the track, about where the present station is," Embro said.

**NEW TOWNS CREATED.** With the railroad came the towns of Reagan and Perry. Reagan was named in honor of W. R. Reagan, who gave land for the railroad and townsite; Perry was named for Albert G. Perry, who was active for Texas Independence and who later served as district judge. After the railroad came, people received supplies and goods from railroad towns and the long trips in ox-wagons and animal-drawn vehicles were no longer necessary. Naturally, there was some shifting of activities and railroad towns became important. Mail service was improved and community post offices appeared in numbers. The Postal Department had not instituted rural delivery service and post offices were established, as enterprising merchants and citizens asked for them. Rivalries for post offices were sometimes spirited, since post offices were considered assets. After the establishment of Rural Mail Delivery in 1896, the number of post offices decreased.

**ERA OF EXPANSION.** With the railroads, including those which came near the county at Eddy, Kosse, Thornton, and Groesbeck — even Waco — progress was further accelerated. It has been shown that the population of the county increased more than four times from 1860 to 1880. Facilities for farming and stock raising were enhanced and, furthermore, it was easier for prospectors to find out that Falls County's soil is productive and everything is satisfactory in it for building good homes.

Even in the 1870's, some people still living (1946) recollect, it was customary for people, traveling between the present vicinities of Barclay, Durango, Mooreville, Cottonwood, and northeastern Falls County — and the county seat — to see no houses, or, perhaps, one or two, along the way — ten to twenty miles. By the 1890's, the picture was different, and the county, though still sparsely settled, was dotted with homes and farms. The population in 1890 was 20,706.

**CATTLE RAISING IN THE COUNTY.** When the first settlers came to this area, wild game was plentiful — deer, buffalo, bear, turkeys, geese, wild cattle and others.

These settlers simply went "a-hunting," when they needed meat — and got it! As abundant wild game passed, they turned to cattle, which were more easily controlled, or domesticated. They began building their own herds, or making it possible for them to propagate on the open prairies. Even before the War Between the States, people found profit in cattle raising and cattle "round ups." During the war, the cattle business became even more profitable. The Confederate armies needed beeves and many were driven eastward to them. After Union forces captured Mississippi and Louisiana, cattle were driven to Houston and taken by boats to the Confederate armies.

During the war, cattlemen of Falls County fared well and Mrs. Lillian Schiller St. Romain, through research, recorded that George H. and J. T. Gassaway (brothers), whose homes were about three miles west of the present town of Lott, engaged extensively in cattle (also, horses and mules) and held a special commission with the Confederate government to furnish the armies.

After the War, the county's natural advantages for stock raising, including its succulent grasses, abundance of water and wide-open spaces, continued to stimulate stock raising. It was one of the earliest crops—with good markets in Louisiana and "up North." As early as the 1860s, cattlemen had learned that by branding their cattle and gathering them into herds at some convenient place, sturdy cowboys and ponies could profitably take them on "drives" to markets, the stock subsisting upon the grasses of the open prairies and water along the route. Late in 1865, stock yards were opened in Chicago and by 1870 packing houses were established at Kansas City, Missouri, and elsewhere. Railroads had been built from the East into the Central North. Texas cattlemen drove their cattle to St. Joseph, Missouri, from whence they were carried by rail to packing houses. By the 1870s railroads had been extended and cattlemen were driving their stock to Abilene, Kansas.

Other factors contributing to driving herds to the various markets included the fact that cattle fattened en route on the open range; another was, suppression of Indians,



making the drives less hazardous. The drives were not without their problems, however, for only the sturdiest men could endure the hard work, and also, farmers along the routes became resentful for a number of reasons. At one time Kansas and Missouri farmers organized and armed to oppose driving cattle through their farms, among reasons being the fear of the introduction of cattle diseases reported to exist in parts of Texas.

**ON THE TRAILS.** Life on the cattle trails—experiences of the cowboys, their longings, meditations and creeds (even, “laws of the trail”)—are part of the tradition and history of Texas. Driving cattle “up the trails” is considered an epic in Texas history. It ended with the increase of population, the fencing of individual farms and the coming of the network of railroads. Stories of Texas cowboys (of the trails and ranches) became famous throughout the world. In 1946, there’s something in the nature of Texans to impel them to feel proud at being dressed in cowboy regalia, to take part in, witness, or be seen at, a rodeo—a phase of the cowboy’s area.

The coming of barbed-wire (in the late 1870s and early 1880s) and fencing of farms “pushed” the famous trails farther and farther westward. Ultimately, cattle-driving ended, railroads affording faster, more economical and dependable transportation.

Some of the cattle trails became nationally famous. Among them were the Chisholm Trail, the Dodge Trail, the Pecos, or Goodnight, Trail, the Loving-Goodnight Trail and others. Early people of Falls County related that a trail of importance crossed the western corner of Falls County, near Eddy, in the 1870s. This was not recorded, but Jessie H. Humphries of the Department of Sociology of State College for Women, strengthened evidence of it by saying in a radio address in March, 1935, that the old “Chisholm Trail passed through Bell County for the Indian territory.”

**EARLY LAWLESSNESS IN CATTLE RAISING.** Some people resented the advent of barbed-wire in the county. In 1871, John W. Gates demonstrated at San Antonio to a

group of cattlemen that a fence made of barbed-wire could hold the wildest steers. Soon afterwards, barbed-wire was on the market and Falls County people began fencing their cotton, corn, and other crops. Accustomed to the free, open range for their stock, some tried to stop the use of barbed-wire by "fence-cutting." At night, or when not observed, fences would be destroyed, wires cut to pieces and made unfit for further use. Another phase of lawlessness, which plagued the early cattle business (even to the present, to a small extent) was "cattle-rustling." Cattle-rustling was simply "appropriating" somebody else's cattle, either by taking up un-branded calves and steers, branding them with the cattle-rustler's brand, or changing brands and getting cattle to markets, less conscionable in their methods of doing business.

Much of the "fence-cutting" and "cattle-rustling" ended with the 1890s, after people for a time, had taken the "law in their hands" and when the county's law enforcing agencies became more efficient. At one era thieves (cattle-rustlers) were punished mysteriously, and anonymously, some "swinging by their necks at the end of ropes" in isolated places for "unknown" reasons. Older people of the last generation accredited Sheriff L. B. Barton with doing much to end lawlessness in the county.

From the free-grazing and trail-driving era to the present, many changes have taken place in cattle raising. At first, cattlemen "rounded-up" cattle from the open prairies; later, they encouraged propagation of stock, branded their cattle and kept watch over them; and still later, when fencing became the practice, they established their own ranches and herds, large and small, devoting efforts to the improvement of strains in their stock, either for dairying, or beef production. There were no large ranches in Falls County, such as were found in some parts of Texas, but practically every farm had its own cattle, for profit and home use. The modern and most successful cattlemen featured proven stock, scientifically bred and fed for most profitable production.

**EARLY CATTLEMEN.** Since the cattle industry in Falls County was, and is, made up of numbers of smaller farms and ranches, all of which have cattle, it is impossible to list all successful cattlemen. In the first decades of and after the War Between the States, a few came to be known for their stock raising industry. Elijah F. Davison, who settled in the vicinity of the towns of Barclay and Westphalia in the 1850s was known to have dealt in cattle extensively at one time. Already mentioned were George H. and J. T. Gassaway. Among the others were John W. Powers, who settled in the 1840s, or early 1850s, in the vicinity of the present town of Rosebud; John C. Peevey, near the present town of Lott; and Milburn Westmoreland and J. T. Troyman of the present Durango and Blevins area, who dealt in cattle considerably in the 1860s. J. C. Holloway and others recalled that, in addition to the above, Tom and R. J. Garrett, Matt Walker, Cyrus Whitaker, John Waters, J. A. Powers, Judge J. D. Oltorf, L. W. Goodrich, B. B. Clarkson and several families of Erskines and Brotherses were well known for having bought and sold cattle. Of course, there were others, whose names were not available.

|    |     |                  |    |
|----|-----|------------------|----|
| JG | COB | 20               | JO |
| HS | JP  | Ⓔ                | OW |
| Ⓐ  | W   | M <sup>c</sup> C | CB |
| I  | IE  | \                | 70 |
| A  | XA  | ⋈                | ⬠  |
| X2 | YP  | P60              | W6 |

#### CATTLE BRANDS

##### Typical of Falls County

From the hundreds of cattle brands recorded in the Falls County Clerk's office, the above were taken: (left to right rows numbered top to bottom)

First row: J. T. Gassaway, Elijah F. Davison, George H. Gassaway (two brands)

Second row: John W. Powers, Joseph A. Powers, Cyrus Whitaker, J. D. Oltorf

Third row: Goodrich and Clarkson, A. E. Watson, E. McCullough, C. T. Barclay

Fourth row: R. J. Garrett, J. W. Erskine, J. G. Jordan, Jesse Brothers

Fifth row: G. A. King, J. P. Norwood, Susan Wiggins, W. S. Jones

Sixth row: John T. Twyman, J. H. Parham, Mrs. H. E. Perry, John Waters



**POLITICS AFTER THE WAR.** Immediately after the War Between the States, the people of Falls County, as elsewhere in Texas, were too discouraged and too intent upon rebuilding their homes and lives to take much interest in politics. Many believe that this attitude throughout the State made it easier for the nightmare of the E. J. Davis Regime to take place, part of which were unpleasanties Falls County experienced while District Judge J. W. Oliver held court (and politics!) in the county. After about eight years, however, Texans rallied and the Davis regime ended. In Falls County, too, people awakened to the realization that it is important to see that fair-minded public officials are in office.

The welfare and progress of the Negroes was retarded, because many of them unwittingly became tools of carpet-baggers and schemers. Their cause suffered an injury, which many believe lingers to the present (1946). Reaction of radicalism produced the Texas Constitution of 1876, which is the Constitution of today. It has been debated that the Constitution is too conservative, since it was the reaction of radicalism. Under the Constitution, payment of a poll tax became a requisite to voting in elections. Perhaps, the poll tax requirement was aimed to counteract the evils of the votes of uneducated negroes being manipulated by schemers; or, perhaps, it was inspired to further white supremacy. In any event, it was a reaction to radicalism.

Another reaction was formation of the White Man's Primaries. This came after a hectic era in which many negroes voted with poll taxes paid by others. The original cost of the poll tax was one dollar and, in hotly contested elections, frequently manipulators, or groups, found it profitable to pay poll taxes for the Negroes, especially leaders and influential ones. Organizations of White Man's Primaries was aimed to offset this evil. Under the White Man's Primary system, candidates were required to submit their candidacies in the Primaries, where differences among party members were settled, and, afterwards, in the "general" election everyone supported the nominee. The system practically ended the votes of the negroes, as a balance of power, which previ-

ously had brought about election of unpopular officials. Also, it ended irregularities of ignorant Negroes, who became unwitting accessories to violations of phases of the election laws.

The White Man's Primary system continued in Falls County, although it was more often recognized as the "Democratic Primary" system.

**NEW POLITICAL PARTIES.** Even after the adoption of the Constitution of 1876, Texans were in confusion, politically, local conditions varying with local problems—social and economic. There were many contributing influences to formation of political parties and politicians aligned themselves with those influences. In Texas there were new parties, as follows: The Greenback party (early 1880s), the People's party, or Populist Party (middle 1880s and 1890s); the Prohibition party and Union Labor party, neither of which became very strong at that time; and others. About 1873, the farmers, who had suffered more than any other class of people in the war, began organizing in efforts to improve farming conditions. Through local lodges, they aimed to secure fairer prices for what they bought and sold and to obtain better freight rates. Patrons of Husbandry, commonly known as "grangers" came into existence and two years later the Farmers' Alliance. Neither of these organizations were political bodies but they had the effect of turning sentiment in favor of political reforms beneficial to farmers.

Several "grange halls" (lodges) were established in Falls County, when these movements flourished.

An early copy of the Marlin Democrat reported from an August 11, 1882, "Falls County Index," published by William Shelton, who served at one time as county judge, and at another as mayor of Marlin, as recording, "Politics was rife in Falls County in those days. Real blood and thunder methods were employed at that time and the Democrats were opposed by what was then known as the Independent National Party. Leaders held sway and seldom did the Democrats elect more than half

the officials." (The "Index," of course, referred to times previous to 1882, perhaps in the early 1870s.)

The Marlin Democrat also recorded that the Greenback party had been active at first and the Independent National had succeeded it. The Marlin Ball, another county newspaper, published by T. C. Oltorf, was influential for the Democratic party.

**NEGROES WELL BEHAVED.** Although the negroes were inexperienced and often unable to comprehend political angles during the first twenty five years of their freedom, they conducted themselves commendably in the county. A few thrust themselves forward somewhat without regards to social aesthetics, much to the chagrin of some people, and a few were "used" by schemers, promising impractical rewards for their votes and influence. But, there were no extreme difficulties experienced. Some of the negroes seemed slow to learn there were never any "forty acres and a mule" or other impractical bestowals and that progress comes from industry, service to mankind, and approval among fellowmen—from within, not from without.

**FARMING DIFFICULT.** The new people who came after the war cleared densely wooded areas along the streams and the Brazos valley and turned much of the prairie under the plow. Many new farms were created during the 1870s and 1880s. The county's railroad, which came in 1870, brought markets closer and accelerated population.

But farming was primitive. It was usually done with a cast-iron plow with a wooden stock and a few extra sweeps and shovels, some heavy eye-hoes, one or two mules (some oxen were still used) and an immense amount of work. Planting was done by sowing the seed by hand and cultivating with eye-hoes and mules, behind which were cast-iron plow and a man (or woman), walking four times down each row—from sun to sun. Work was hard—almost back-breaking—and there was little rest and relaxation. Without hard work, nothing was accomplished.



**UPS AND DOWNS.** Despite hard work and the productive soil, the people met disappointments—along with triumphs. The year of 1882, it is recalled, was one of the greatest crop years in the history of the county. An average of nearly fifty bushels of corn and a bale to a bale and a half of cotton to the acre was the yield. It was said that cotton stalks were so tall and so abundant with cotton that two pickers were required to pick each row, each picking one side of the stalks. Prices were good and everyone was prosperous.

The year of 1887 was a dry one. Most of the crops were failures, many of the county's business men failed. People suffered from hunger. It was a time of rugged individualism and everyone was compelled to work out his own problems. With perhaps, one or two private banks in the county, people found little, if any, financial assistance—none at all, if he were friendless.

Many people recollected that Marx Levy, a Marlin merchant, rendered assistance in every section of the county. Mr. Levy had a general store, in which people could buy almost anything from shirts, shoes, dresses, socks, farm implements, hardware, barbed-wire, sugar and flour, to molasses and whiskey. People, at some time or another, went to Mr. Levy, asked him to "carry them until the next crop is made." Mr. Levy, an excellent judge of human nature, and with faith in people and Falls County, usually "carried them." They bought supplies, and paid—after "crops were in" and marketed.

Despite set-backs—including "dry" and "wet" years and unpredictable weather, the county's progress was steady. A number of communities west of the river came into importance—Mooreville, Durango, Carolina, Rupee, and others.

**COUNTY GETS TWO RAILROADS.** In 1890-92 the second railroad came to Falls County. It ran north and south, west of the river—known as the San Antonio and Aransas Pass, more recently, a part of the Southern Pacific system. It extended from Cameron to Waco and, with it came, the Falls County towns of Rosebud, Travis, Lott, Chilton and Satin (succeeding Guda and Laguna).

There was considerable shifting of centers of activities, railroad towns gaining ascendancy over others — Rupee (now extinct), Durango and Mooreville, declining. Early Carolina (also extinct) west of the railroad was eclipsed, although it had previously given way to Durango.

The railroad was built under difficulties and, from 1890 to 1892, trains ran from Waco to Lott and a stage-coach carried passengers from Lott to Cameron, until the line was completed, August, 1892.

About 1901 or 1902, the third railroad came — the International and Great Northern, which became a part of the Missouri Pacific system. It ran north and south, connecting Valley Junction, south of the County, with Waco. It was on the east side of the river and, with it, came the Falls County towns of Eloise, Highbank, McClanahan and Otto. It caused some shifting of communities, but the shift was not as marked as was the shift which the second railroad caused (west of the river).

**"STUMP" SPEAKERS AND POLITICS.** While Falls County underwent considerable confusion after the War Between the States, one era—late 1880s and 1890s—was distinctive for its "stump speakings." The expression originated from the practice of speakers going to picnics, assemblies and farm centers and delivering their orations from a stump—a convenient "stand" in the area, or new ground. Even, in the days of "stump speakers," the county's politics had not calmed down to reason and democratic sportsmanship. Elements of emotionalism, vindicativeness and "mud-slinging," frequently accompanied elections.

Democrats, Republicans, Populists and other political influences had strong followings and those familiar with the era said the speakers, appealing almost entirely to men, relied chiefly upon "tall tales" and risque jokes to carry points, or answer and belittle opponents.

It was a day when "mud-slinging" was indulged in frequently and, perhaps, effectively. Even some of the ablest speakers of that era employed such methods.

Checking through the files of the *Marlin Democrat* and memoirs of the late County School Superintendent, A. W. Eddins, it was found that among the speakers, who stirred the people of Falls County, at that time, were the brilliant young blind Populist, T. P. Gore, long-time U. S. Senator from Oklahoma, Stump Ashby, champion of Populism for the nation, Cyclone Davis, the prohibitionist, and others. They preceded other great speakers, such as Charles A. Culberson, Stephen A. Hogg and others.

**RELIGIOUS PROGRESS.** Practically, in every community of the county, one of the first things the pioneers did was to organize and establish churches and schools. Naturally, there were bad elements in society and a continual war between good and evil was waged. The good in people gained ascendancy.

Churches and schools were often held in the same houses and private teachers engaged, until public schools were provided.

It is debatable whether, or not, the struggle over the prohibition of the manufacture and sale of intoxicating liquors belongs to the religious or political life of the county. Church people considered liquors a curse upon mankind and, frequently, joined hands to prevent their manufacture and sale. A number of prohibition elections were held in the precincts and the county, as a whole.

A campaign to prevent the sale of liquors in the county was recalled in "stump speaking" time, in which Roger Q. Mills delivered a series of addresses defending the rights to sell liquor and Dr. B. H. Carroll, noted churchman, championed prohibition. The campaign was spirited and "mud-slinging" was indulged in, particularly, by Congressman Mills, according to those who heard the speakers. Mr. Mills is reported to have censured church people for taking part in the campaign, particularly, preachers. He was sarcastic toward Dr. Carroll and said of him, "Hell is full of such preachers and their legs are sticking out of the windows." Dr. Carroll, in



reply, mildly rebuked the Congressman for his tirade against the church and good morals, and warned that future generations, in their memories, would think less of him for his words.

The campaign was simply illustrative of politics and "campaigns" of that day, where rules were limited and the game was to give and take—and ask no quarters. In this campaign the outcome was measured by individual feelings and responses. The anti-prohibitionists won.

**DAWN OF THE SCIENTIFIC AGE.** By the 1890's railroads had become a part of American Life, steamships were crossing the seas and going up and down the larger rivers; other scientific inventions, soon to revolutionize American life, had been achieved. Thomas A. Edison had made miraculous discoveries in electricity and in other lines, including the recording of sounds, human voices and music, and reproducing them at will. The instrument was called a "grafophone," and was demonstrated in the county in the 1890's. Electric lights were in use in New York in 1880 and in 1885 the first electric railway was serving Baltimore. Electric telegraph had been in use in Texas since the first railroads, according to Charles H. Dillon of the Western Union Telegraph Company.

It is impossible to know who had the first telephone in the county. About 1895, people of Mooreville spoke and heard voices "over the wire." Of course, telephones were in use elsewhere and some had had previous experience with them.

According to the best authority, one of the first electric plants in the county was used at the oil mill in Marlin about 1890. The Marlin Oil Company installed a dynamo (direct current) to generate electricity for its mill and offices. Not long afterwards two copper wires were strung to a business street and one or two stores lighted. The dynamo ran at nights, part time, and not on holidays. Private electrical plants, perhaps, were the first in use in the county. Later, plants were installed to furnish

lights and power to those who agreed to pay a monthly charge, depending upon the number and size of the lights and motors.

In the early 1890's, Gus Welle installed an electric plant in Marlin for public use and began supplying current to business houses and a few residences. His plant was a pioneer in the business.

In 1893, Charles Duryear demonstrated the gasoline buggy, forerunner of automobiles and other self-propelled vehicles. As far as known, the first automobile owned in Falls County was bought by I. J. Nathan, in 1904, according to N. D. Naman, whose wife was Mr. Nathan's daughter and who recollected the machine and also conferred with Mrs. Nathan, who lives in New York (1946). Mr. Naman wrote the automobile was a 2-cylinder Oldsmobile with "regular couch seats—front and back seats, back to back—cranked from the front by hand. Mr. Nathan . . . caused quite a commotion. It got to where he had to notify the public through the newspaper to watch their horses when he was taking his auto out, giving the time and hours," he wrote. People of Marlin recalled that horses, hitched to fine vehicles and wagons and saddle-horses were frantically frightened by their "competition." Frequent run-aways were prevented only by quick thinking, "good driving" or "good riding," when the new machines appeared or were heard. Mr. Nathan, with a sense of humor, as well as consideration of others, advertised in words to this effect: "Be prepared to hold your horses. I'll be out in my auto, four to five, Sunday afternoon. Will drive to the river and back, up the Waco road and return by the light plant to my home on Capps Street. I. J. Nathan."

With the coming of early telegraph, telephones, electric lights and power and automobiles in the 1890's, other discoveries were forerunners of new things. In the middle 1890's, a traveling entertainer demonstrated the "talking machine." Thomas A. Edison had invented it. Most of the entertainment consisted in taking a little black cylinder about two and one half inches in diameter and five inches long, carefully wedging it onto a tapered

shaft, winding the "Grafonphone," letting it run, its point on a diaphragm at one end of a horn touching the revolving cylinder. From the horn came music, talking and other sounds, according to recordings on the cylinder. The apparatus was forerunner of the elaborate Victrolas and other "trade-named" instruments, using cylinders and discs, which came into wide use.

Another scientific wonder attracted great interest in the middle 1890's. Two instruments transmitted and received electricity without the use of wires. Description is not practical, for scientific reasons, but the entertainer demonstrated that by "starting this, you get motion (or light) over here — and there are no wires connecting them." People could hardly dream that in a few decades — in their lifetimes — music, human voices, noises and all other sounds, even power, would be traveling thousands of miles through the air, without wires, or other connections. Furthermore, they could not dream that "seeing things miles away" would be a reality "over the air" in 1946 — and scientists would be planning to communicate with other planets of the universe!

**FALLS COUNTY MEN IN THE SPANISH-AMERICAN WAR.** America was at peace almost thirty-five years after the War Between the States and the people had about recovered from its effects, when other war clouds appeared. In 1895, a revolution broke out in Cuba against Spain, the ruling country. On February 15, 1898, the U. S. Battleship Maine blew up in the harbor of Havana, Cuba, and, as a result, the United States severed diplomatic relations with Spain. Three days later, Spain declared war on the United States.

Americans needed for that war were obtained by enlistments. It is not known how many Falls County men served in the Spanish-American War, although some names were made available through the help of those who served in it. A group of men volunteered at Lott, and soon afterwards, the men were ordered to Galveston for service. Assembled for reporting to Galveston, they were escorted to the train at Lott by the Lott band and numbers of relatives and interested friends. Among them



were H. A. Bloxom, Will L. Watkins, L. Fowler Henry, Will D. King, W. C. Fowler, W. U. Moore, H. W. Bowen, Rolla Patterson, E. J. Daffin, J. Vining, Howard Magaha, Martin Wiggington, Will S. Smith, Joe V. Pledge, John W. Givins, — Ducek, and, perhaps, others. Enroute to Galveston, Ollie Hughes and W. E. Muldrew of Rosebud joined the group and James Kenworth, Charles Dushek, Joe Buckley and others joined at Burlington and Cameron, bringing the total to about twenty-five.

At Galveston, they were attached to Company H. First, U. S. Voluntary Infantry Regiment, known as "The Immunes." After several weeks of intensive training, the regiment was ordered to embark for Cuba for service, but a maritime strike prevented in-come and out-go of ships and the regiment was sent to New Orleans for embarkation there. At New Orleans, the regiment boarded a small coastwise freighter, the Berlin, but the ship was found to be overloaded and the commander of "The Immunes" chose to disembark and wait for other transportation. The regiment pitched camp in the race tracks at the New Orleans fair grounds and one New Orleans newspaper referred to the men as "The Texas Brownies" and another, "The Wild Comanches from Texas."

Frequent rains and low ground, poorly drained, converted the camp to a quagmire. Exposed to mud, dampness, their clothes wet most of the time and compelled to sleep on the damp ground with little bedding, amid swarms of mosquitoes, about half of the men became ill. The exhibition building on the fair grounds had been converted into a hospital, but it was ill-equipped and running over with sick men. The commander of the regiment was forced to report unreadiness for service three times. The War Department at Washington became exasperated and ordered the men to go back to Galveston for mustering out. They had volunteered for service and petitions were sent to Washington, asking for service in the Philippines, since the war in Cuba was over, but the petition brought no results. After about five months in the army, the men were discharged.

Among those who saw actual service in the war were Jim Wingo of Lott, George Howard of Rosebud, and Lon Means and Jim McNeil of Bell-Falls, according to W. U. Moore, Mrs. P. P. Bridgewater, and others, who furnished the above facts, with the explanation "it is difficult to give full information and avoid mistakes, since the Spanish-American War ended so long ago."

Among others who served were Ed Schimming, Warren Swann, and Jim Bob Quinn, who lived in Falls County, but enlisted for service in Kansas, A. C. Schimming of Marlin said; A. H. Snead, J. H. Moseley, O. S. Harlan, Alex Mitchell, and S. D. Heyser, all of whom came to Falls County after the war. Others who enlisted for the war included Ira Buell, Walter Bradbury, Walter Bryant, H. G. Henson, J. Talashek, George Howard, S. P. Pitsucha, Ben F. Loftin and Tom Connally.

**A NEW CENTURY ARRIVES.** In 1900 the population of Falls County was 33,342. Confederate veterans of the War Between the States and veterans of the Spanish American War owned many farms and were active in the business and social life of the county. They had recovered from their war experiences, although it was later before the veterans of the latter war, perhaps, became readjusted.

People were busy laying the foundation for an era of science and mechanics, destined to follow. Much of the land was in cultivation, stock-raising was individualized and farmers managed their own farms.

In September, 1900, sympathies and interest of the people were aroused over the catastrophe which befell Galveston, struck by a hurricane and tidal wave on September 8th., causing the loss of 6,000 lives. Strong gales swept over Falls County during the storm, accompanied by light rains and mists, but the county suffered little, if any, damage.

Development of "sending electricity through air without wires" (demonstrated in the county in the 1890's) had made it possible for Marconi to signal the letter "S"

across the Atlantic Ocean from England to Newfoundland. It was the beginning of "wireless-telegraphy" and forerunner of radio and television.

**BEGINNING OF AGE OF SCIENCE.** The quarter of a century after 1900 was an era in which modern machines and scientific developments began changing the daily life of the people. By 1900 people knew about telephone, electric lights and power, phonographs and a number of other discoveries and developments. The first automobile came in 1902, as noted elsewhere. About 1905, or 1906, Dr. W. H. Allen, Dr. B. G. Ward and Dr. J. W. Torbett of Marlin received three automobiles in the same shipment. Although equipped with pneumatic tires and considered modern at that time, if seen in 1946, they would attract more attention as curiosities than they did as "modern achievements" in 1905.

Mrs. W. H. (Nettie) Allen said the name of the automobiles (as far as known, the second to arrive in the county) was "Pope-Hartford," and they were provided with front and rear seats. The driver and companion entered the front (driver's) seat by stepping high onto a pedal about six inches in diameter, balancing themselves and stepping into the tonneau. Passengers for the rear opened a small "back" door, raised a center section of the rear seat, stepped high upon another "step" and into the tonneau, closed the rear door and let down the seat — and sat. According to her recollection the automobiles did not have tops, windshields, nor fenders, except for small flat shields a few inches wide, held over the wheels by small rods attached to the chassis.

The machines were equipped with one-cylinder gasoline engines, which lay in a horizontal position under the front seats. They had low-speed planetary transmissions, to start the machines moving — after they were hand-cranked from the side — and clutches (for high gear) were operated by small levers on the outside of the right front seats. The steering wheels were on the right side and chains transmitted power from the engine-transmission units to the rear wheels. The machines would travel about twenty-five miles, if the roads were



good and "everything were working all right." Starting the machines sometimes required "a lot of hard cranking." Sometimes, they didn't start. Mrs. Allen said her husband, requiring more dependable travel, since he was a doctor, ultimately sold (or traded) his Pope-Hartford to two young men, who lived at Calvert.

While the first automobiles were rather crude, in the light of later developments, they were forerunners of machines universally in use, practically replacing animals for transportation. Manufacturers continued their improvements, eventually abandoning the "horseless-carriage" idea (a buggy, or carriage, with an engine attached), and equipping their machines with pneumatic tires and ultimately multi-cylinder engines, gear- and shaft-"drives" to rear wheels. Better automobiles brought wider use and a new kind of business was created — the "garage."

**"GARAGE" — A NEW WORD.** Before the first decade of the new century was over, another "coined" word came into popular use — "garage," meaning a place where automobiles are stored, or, in a broader sense, where they are stored and repaired as a public service. By 1912, there were a number of garages in the county and people were buying the machines about as fast as they could be obtained from the pioneer factories.

**AUTOMOBILES AND THEIR SERVICE.** At first, some were reluctant to buy, even ride in automobiles. They said they "are impractical," "too expensive," or "I'll stay with my horses and vehicles," or "the roads are too bad and the machines are dangerous." But manufacturers vied with each other to produce automobiles with popular appeal, utility and dependability — and did!

Early purchasers were compelled to bargain "extra" for fenders, tops, windshields and reserve-tires (spare-tires), choosing those needed, or for which they felt able to pay. It was not long, however, before manufacturers, dealers and purchasers saw the wisdom of automobiles being "fully-equipped."

Most of the early automobiles were gasoline-propelled, but a number of steam-propelled machines were in the county in the decade, 1910 to 1920. The added cost of steam engines and greater simplicity and dependability of gasoline-engines retarded manufacture of the steam-driven ones.

**ROAD BUILDING.** With the coming of automobiles, the need for better roads commanded much attention. Throughout the county, organizations and individual citizens were talking about and planning for better roads. Public meetings and special elections were held to provide funds with which to build them—some meeting success and some unsurmountable obstacles. Improvements were made, though slowly, and people bought more automobiles.

Many found it necessary to keep their horses and vehicles in reserve, because roads often became impassable with mud, or deep ruts and damaged bridges. The early gasoline engines, too, frequently failed to start, especially in wintry weather, when gasoline failed to vaporize quickly and mix with air in proper proportion. The carburetors "flooded." Development of better carburetors, better engines, better ignition systems—better automobiles—and better gasoline brought satisfactory dependability and animals for travel for 1946 were almost passe.

**HIGHWAYS IN THE COUNTY.** The demand for better roads not only grew in Falls County, but in the State, at large. The State Legislature, answering demands, passed a number of acts to facilitate road building, particularly highways, connecting counties in all sections of the State. In 1909 an act was passed allowing counties to provide subdivisions for voting bonds for road improvements; in 1917, the State Highway Commission was established; in 1925 the Commission was given control of designated state highways; and in 1932 the State assumed interest and sinking fund obligations on bonds previously voted by civil subdivisions for the improvement of state highways.

Revenues for building highways were provided by levying taxes on gasoline, from motor license fees, special appropriations and federal assistance — all of which is recorded in the history of the State Highway Commission and elsewhere, and not appropriate in this history. A history of the State Highway Commission, the creation, maintenance and extension of highways is a part of the history of Texas.

Through the courtesy of the Texas Highway Department at Austin and Mr. G. B. Finley, Maintenance Engineer, the following brief facts about highways in Falls County were made possible; in 1919 the road from Cameron, northwards through Rosebud, Travis, Lott, Chilton, and Golinda (Highway 77) was given attention by state and federal authorities and, by 1927, the State Highway Department assumed maintenance of it.

Late in 1924, a road from Bremond through the county, via Reagan, Marlin and Perry was designated Highway No. 6 and its maintenance, also, was assumed by the Department prior to 1927.

In 1930, two roads became highways, namely, one from Marlin to Chilton (Highway No. 139) and another from Rosebud to Temple (Highway No. 53) was designated and maintenance of both was, or had been, assumed by the Department prior to 1927.

In 1939 a road from the Marlin-Chilton Highway No. 139, at a point about a mile west of the river, to Lott, Westphalia, and to connect with Highway 53), became a highway, Highway No. 320, and maintenance was assumed by the Department in 1940 and 1941.

In 1944 a Farm-to-Market road (FM 107), from Chilton to Mooreville and Eddy, was designated and the Department assumed maintenance a few months later in the same year.

Morris L. Malone, Falls County Resident Engineer for the Texas Highway Department, said in December, 1946, another Farm - to - Market road (FM147) had been designated, extending from Marlin northeastward through McClanahan for a short distance beyond McClanahan.



**AIRPLANES ARRIVE.** At Kitty Hawk, North Carolina, in December, 1903, two inventive mechanics, the Wright brothers, took to the air in a heavier-than-air machine, for which another new word, "airplane," was coined. At the time, the flight attracted little attention, but the world was destined to see airplanes sailing through the air widely and in wide use in wars.

People of Falls County saw their first airplanes at "air shows," or "air demonstrations." Enterprising adventurers assembled, or acquired machines and staged "air shows" for personal profit, or for cities, or organizations, who "bargained for air shows" to attract crowds to their celebrations and public events.

In 1915 a small group of mechanics and adventurers, including two young women, acquired land from H. E. Wrenn about a mile and a half northeast of Marlin, built a shed, or house, upon it, assembled three airplanes and staged a number of air shows for local people and for other communities. While a few had seen airplanes previously, most of the people of the county saw their first ones at that time.

Description of the early airplanes is not appropriate here, although it might be mentioned that early pilots sat in open, flimsy-appearing seats in a precarious place, "out front" with the great weight of the engine behind them. If (and when) the plane crashed, or came in contact with an object, the heavy engine came crashing upon the pilot. (Later, engines were placed in front, or elsewhere, for greater safety.)

About a year after the "air field" was established on the Wrenn land, one of the airplanes crashed, taking the life of one of the pilots, a young woman. Enthusiasm for airplane riding faded for a time, Mr. Wrenn said.

Ed Schimming of Marlin, who had enlisted in the Spanish-American War and was in the Philippines about 1904, assembled an airplane, flew it a few times, crashed a few times less than he flew and, finally, crated it and flew no more, his brother, A. C. Schimming of Marlin said.

While the early airplanes were crude (in the light of the luxurious ones of 1946), dangerous and unreliable, the Wright Brothers started another great industry and air travel became a part of American life.

**MECHANICAL FARMING.** Farming by machines (tractors) began before the 1920's, but after that year, gained importance. Early tractors, like early automobiles, went through a series of experiments, disappointments and failures to the farmers. The first reasonably practical ones were used for plowing and, even then, they were expensive. Lack of knowledge of how to build them for practical use delayed usage, and later, lack of knowledge of how to use them further retarded acceptance by farmers. By 1930 tractors were in wide use and in the 1940's they had gained such a firm hold upon farming that horses and mules had decreased to small numbers. Machines of 1946 were designed to plow, plant, cultivate, mow and even harvest crops. In addition they were adaptable for special work, such as furnishing power for grinders, threshing machines and pumps.





## CHAPTER XI

### A World at War - World War I

**WORLD WAR I BEGINS.** Along with the entire nation, in 1917 Falls County people found themselves involved in a great World War. It began in 1914, causes of which are recorded in world history, the immediate cause being the assassination of an Austrian archduke and his wife, June 28, 1914, by a Serbian student. A month later, Austria declared war on Serbia and quickly many nations were at war. Germany, Austria-Hungary, Turkey and Bulgaria (known as the Central Powers) were at war with France, Great Britain, Russia, Italy, Japan, Roumania, Serbia, Belgium, Greece, Portugal, and ultimately, the United States (known as the Allies).

When the conflict began, President Woodrow Wilson and Congress used every known precaution to prevent this nation becoming involved. The Central Powers, the most aggressive of which was Germany, began preying upon ships on the seas and incidents occurred in violation of international law. The United States protested, assuring Germany and her allies this country sought neutrality, but asserted it would not submit to interference with its rights upon the seas. A number of incidents took place, Germany insisting upon her determination to stop the flow of war supplies to countries at war against her.

On February 1, 1917, Germany announced a policy of unrestricted submarine warfare. Immediately, there were other violations of American shipping rights and President Wilson ordered the arming of U. S. merchant ships for protection. On April 6, 1917, conditions became such that the U. S. Congress declared a state of war existed between this country and Germany. Soon, this nation joined the Allies and was at war with the Central Powers.

On May 18, 1917, President Wilson signed the Selective Service Conscription Bill, passed by the Congress, and on June 5th, all males between the ages of twenty-one and thirty, inclusive, were registered, subject to call for military service. In the meantime, American industry, farming, professional people, and other businesses were geared to making arms, ammunition, supplies and preparing for war. The flow of supplies to nations at war against the Central Powers was accelerated.

**OUTBURST OF PATRIOTISM.** On Registration day, June 5th, 3,802 Falls County men registered for service, to be used, if needed in the prosecution of the war. Registration was performed by volunteer workers at designated places within the county. County Judge F. S. Heffner and Mayors J. M. Kennedy, of Marlin, Z. A. Booth, of Rosebud, and O. R. Porterfield of Lott, issued patriotic appeals for united effort. Service clubs, women's clubs, lodges and other organizations passed resolutions, pledging all-out cooperation. Patriotic rallies were held in all parts of the county and in Marlin a parade was held, in which the national anthem and other patriotic music was featured. Banners were carried bearing suggestions, as follows: "Join the Garden Army," "More Corn Bread," "More Buttermilk," "More 'Tators," "More Hogs," "More Gardens," and others. Patriotic speeches were made by Judge Heffner, G. W. Glass, Marlin banker, Frank Oltorf, Marlin attorney, and a score of others.

Falls County Negroes passed resolutions pledging "faith in President Wilson and readiness to serve at the call of our country." At their rally, they elected Nelson T. Densman, former slave, chairman and C. A. Moore, secretary. T. B. Broadus presided as master of ceremonies.

The John M. Jolly Chapter of the United Daughters of the Confederacy held a rally and memorial service in honor of former veterans and veterans to be. Farm women met and Newton C. Chaney, agricultural agent, assisted in plans for producing more food and feed.

Falls County schools began a series of patriotic programs and joined county-wide movements to promote production of food and feed.

A meeting, called by County Judge F. S. Heffner, chairman of the Liberty Loan committee, was held in the district court room May 26, 1917, and sales of Liberty Bonds were inaugurated. Thereafter, committees were active, even until after the war. Five Liberty Bond rallies were held, all of which received unselfish support of the people.

An executive committee, John L. Sylvester of Chilton, C. E. Borganier of Cedar Springs, A. Eckerts of Perry, C. C. McCollum of Bolona, Paul Peiper of Barclay, and J. Rector of Eddy, helped organize Falls County people for systematizing more thorough cooperation with state and national authorities in production, conservation and distribution of food and feed. George H. Carter of Marlin, secretary of the Texas State Council of Defense, and others spoke frequently for this work.

**EXEMPTION BOARD FOR THE MILITARY DRAFT.** Dr. L. P. Robertson, John Sutherland and Dr. W. H. Allen were appointed to serve as the Falls County Exemption Board for the Military Draft. Mr. Sutherland began service, but after a short time was replaced by John Cavitt, because of difficulties relating to his citizenship. (Mr. Sutherland was a native of Scotland.) In May, 1918, Dr. Allen resigned from the Board, continuing as examining physician, and Mr. Sutherland was re-appointed and served until the Board finished its work, March 31, 1919. The Board was commended in 1918 for effective and efficient achievement by the Adjutant General of the United States, who stated that "the cost per man produced at the entrainment point in Falls County was less than one-half the average cost for Texas and less than the national average by nearly fifteen per cent."

Of the 3,802 Falls County men registered, the *Marlin Democrat* of July, 1917, recorded, "many will be exempt under the following classifications: Ministers, students of Divinity; persons in military and naval service of the



U. S.; subjects of Germany, and all other aliens who have not taken out their first papers of citizenship; county and municipal officers; customs house clerks, workmen in federal armories, arsenals and navy yards; persons in federal service designated by the president; married men with dependent wife and children, son of dependent widow, aged and infirm parent, or brother of a dependent, or child under sixteen, morally deficient; and any member of a well-recognized religious sect, existing prior to May 18, 1917, whose creed forbids participation in war and whose religious convictions accord with the creed."

**LEGAL ADVISORY BOARD.** Along with organization of the Exemption Board for the Military Draft, and to aid in interpretation of the Selective Service Conscription Bill and its classifications of men for exemptions, a Legal Advisory Board was established with which draftees and the Board advised for their respective rights. Personnel of the Board was not available in 1946, although it was generally believed practically every attorney in the county volunteered his services and served. Some were of the opinion George H. Carter of Marlin was chairman, soon after the Board was organized, but later went to Austin to serve as chairman for Selective Service for Texas, in the office of the Adjutant General and with the rank of Colonel.

**FIRST MEN TO LEAVE FOR SERVICE.** In 1915, Charles Anderson of Durango organized a company of men from Lott and vicinity for service in the National Guard, according to Mrs. Lillian Schiller St. Romain in her "A History of Lott and Its Vicinity." The company was disbanded after several weeks. Later, many of the men of the company served in the war, some, perhaps, included in the first group to leave for service.

The first men of Falls County to leave departed April 4, 1917, according to the *Marlin Democrat*, dated three days later. They were men of Company F, Third Texas Infantry of the Texas National Guard.

The company was organized at Marlin and was comprised of men from all sections of the county. It had served nearly a year on the Texas border, encamped at Mercedes, reasons for its service there being another story. It will be borne in mind the great war began in 1914 and there were reasons for the nation watching its borders, particularly those of the southwest. Pancho Villa, too, was causing trouble in Mexico and there was unrest in that county, all of which may have had something to do with the National Guard being on the Texas border.

On the afternoon of March 27, 1917, most of the men of Company F returned to Marlin from Corpus Christi, at a time when general apprehension over war was widespread. The Company had given an excellent account of itself on the border and was met at the station (H. & T. C.) by a large group of citizens. A parade was formed, led by the Marlin High School band under direction of Prof. A. Ernst, followed by the Company, Marlin's Fire Department and decorated automobiles. At the Arlington Hotel (Coleman and Winter Streets) an address of welcome was delivered by George H. Carter, patriotic music was given by the band and other patriotic features carried out, as well as welcomes to the returning men, numbering about sixty-three (officers and men).

Other men of Company F had gone directly from Corpus Christi to their homes in and near Rosebud, Lott, Travis, and Chilton. Men of Lott vicinity were given a reception by the people of Lott, but those of Rosebud community returned as a surprise to the people there. George A. Stallworth, Albert H. Peterson, Howard Barnhill, and John Posey were detained in Corpus Christi for a few days due to their duties with the supply department.

Relief of the men was brief. Four days after their arrival home, General John A. Hulen, commander of the Texas brigade of the National Guard, said in Austin the men had been demobilized, or demobilization was in progress. But war was approaching nearer and nearer

and on April 2, 1917, a joint resolution of Congress signaled "a State of war exists between the United States and Germany." The resolution was passed to the foreign relations committees for final preparation before presentation to the President for his signature.

Almost immediately, the Adjutant General called out the Texas Guard and the men of Company F, most of whom had "signed up" for service in the national army, if needed, were called back into service. On April 4, 1917, one hundred sixteen officers and men (some had joined the company and others did not "sign up" and did not go) assembled at the station of the International and Great Northern railroad, destined for Fort Sam Houston( San Antonio). Cuyler S. Cousins, first sergeant of the Company, said the company arrived in San Antonio on the next day and soon afterwards went to Freeport, Texas, where it was on guard at the sulphur mines, eventually, going to Fort Worth, Texas, where the men were transferred to the Thirty-Sixth Division of the National Army.

Personnel of the men, who left Marlin for Fort Sam Houston, varied from that of the original company, and members of it later, because of new recruits and separations, and also, because some of the men did not re-enlist, choosing to volunteer for other branches of the service, or remaining at home for sundry reasons. The following list was compiled with the assistance of C. S. Cousins, first sergeant of the company, B. C. Segrest (now of Purvis, Mississippi), one time second sergeant of the company, B. L. Lenoir, Lee Moncrief, and others, and the files of the *Marlin Democrat*. Aside from the commissioned officers, no effort was made to show ranks of the men, for many served with ranks at various times and later some entered training schools and were commissioned for service in other branches of the army and navy. Efforts were made to get the list as-nearly correct as possible, since rosters were misplaced, and apologies were expressed for errors and omissions.



**PERSONNEL OF COMPANY F.** Commissioned officers:  
 Captain R. A. Jameson, First Lieutenant Robin W. Hunnicutt, and Second Lieutenant James F. Dewberry.

**Other Personnel:**

Arledge, Coy  
 Arnold, Charlie

Barnhill, L. H.  
 Barrow, Pierce  
 Barton, Ireland R.  
 Barton, Richard (Dick)  
 Blackburn, —  
 Bozeman, Ellis K.  
 Bozeman, W. H.  
 Breeland, J. F.  
 Brown, Mortimer  
 Bryan, E. J.  
 Bryan, S. W.  
 Burgess, John T.

Cage, —  
 Cawthorne, Jim  
 Chatham, W. H.  
 Clark, Bob  
 Clemmons, Paul  
 Cluck, Belmont  
 Conyers, Douglas W.  
 Cooley, H. C.  
 Cousins, C. S.  
 Culp, Fred  
 Culp, Manard  
 Czirr, Henry

Davis, Ben  
 Deakle, —  
 Deer, Dink  
 Deer, —  
 DeBardeleben, W. S.  
 Dillard, Ira  
 Dunklin, —

Engelke, August  
 Etheridge, J. W.  
 Erwin, Bill

Falk, —  
 Flannagan, John  
 Flannagan, Webster  
 Foanes, —  
 Fricke, Herman

Gibson, —  
 Golding, S. L.  
 Gott, Earl  
 Greener, Herman

Hammer, W. E.  
 Hammond, Jesse  
 Hancock, Earl  
 Harless, Will  
 Harris, —  
 Hayes, Reed L.  
 Hendley, —  
 High, Jack  
 Holmes, Ben F.  
 Horak, Joe  
 Houser, Will  
 Humphrey, Pat  
 Hunnicutt, E. K.  
 Hunnicutt, W. W., Jr.  
 Hutchings, G. L., Sr.

Jensen, —  
 Johnson, W. J.  
 Jones, Odis

Kennedy, —  
 Krugger, Louis

Lane, —  
 Lenoir, Bertram  
 Lenoir, Blanchard L.  
 Lenoir, Herf  
 Liles, Jack  
 Liles, —  
 Little, Dan  
 Little, G. B.

Marek, V. R.  
 Marshall, — (Spot)  
 McCord, A. M.  
 McDaniels, H. B.  
 McGinnis, C. C.  
 McIntyre, W. J.  
 McMath, Dale  
 McReynolds, —  
 Miller, —  
 Moncrief, J. L.  
 Montford, J. L.  
 Moody, —  
 Moore, Brooks  
 Morrison, M. R.

Neal, Buford  
 Nilson, —

Oltorf, J. G., Jr.  
 Otto, Edgar  
 Patterson, J. Bryan

Parton, W. J. (Jeff)  
 Pauling, John W.  
 Peterson, A. H.  
 Polster, Will E.  
 Portele, John T.  
 Posey, John  
 Powers, Bunt  
 Powloski, Ben  
 Pulark, John  
 Putty, Clyde

Robertson, Judson  
 Robertson, T. W.  
 Rogers, Selwyn P.  
 Rogers, T. A., Sr.  
 Ross, W. M.  
 Russell, O. N.  
 Russell, T. S.

Sancetta, —  
 Schuh, Charles P.  
 Segrest, B. C., Sr.  
 Simonds, W. H.  
 Simonds, R. D.  
 Smith, N. S. (Red)  
 Sockwell, Fred S.  
 Spencer, Shaw J.  
 Stallworth, E. A.  
 Stallworth, Geo. A.  
 Stallworth, W. H.  
 Stanley, J.  
 Stevens, —

Tarver, Vic  
 Thames, Virgil T.  
 Thompson, R. S.  
 Thornhall, G. E.  
 Towers, John L.  
 True, A. C.

Umberfield, C. A.

Walker, Marian  
 Walker, Mart T.  
 Wardlaw, —  
 Warhol, Joe  
 West, M. L.  
 Wetzel, Harry  
 Wetzel, W. O.  
 White, James  
 White, Luke  
 Williams, Curley  
 Wyatt, C. G.

**FIRST CONSCRIPTED GROUP LEAVES.** Falls County's first increment of men for the armed forces under the Conscription Bill was two hundred seventy-six men. Under Selective Service, the order in which the men were called was by lottery. The first number drawn was 258 and Herman P. Bletsch of Otto held it. Other numbers were called, and the men were required to report for preliminaries in August. Claims for exemption, of course, were presented to the Board, Dr. L. P. Robertson, John Sutherland and Dr. W. H. Allen.

Camp Travis (San Antonio) was the destination of the first Falls County men to go to war under the Selective Service Conscription Bill. Walter S. Hunnicutt was in charge and the men assembled at the station of the I. & G. N. on the night of September 6, 1917. They were: Mr. Hunnicutt, Dave Smith, George Elmer Davis, B. Westley Christian, Robert Lee Williams, Will Phillips, Charles L. Peyton, Walter S. Gray, Barry Francks, Gordon Blakeway, W. J. McIntyre, all of Marlin; Joe Milton Altwine, Roy Graham Freeman, and Samuel R. Hilliard, all of Rosebud; Solan L. Hobbs, Hugh Tankersley Davison and Walter Burke, all of Reagan, and J. P. White of Durango.

Again, Falls County people realized they were at war. They had seen the men of Company F, Texas National Guard, leave for Fort Sam Houston (San Antonio) in April. More men were leaving — under provisions of the Conscription Bill. The Marlin High School Band played, there was leave-taking of mothers, fathers, brothers, sisters, sweethearts and friends — the train was gone —.

**MANY LEFT AFTERWARDS.** With the nation geared to the war effort — to get it over as quickly as possible — throngs of men were made ready and routed to the training centers. Not all waited for conscription. Many enlisted, went to training camps and aviation fields, and volunteered for service in the Medical Corps and elsewhere.

The second group of Falls County to leave under the Selective Service Conscription Bill numbered a hundred

thirty-six men, according to the newspaper. They assembled at the station of the I. & G. N. on the night of September 19, 1917. Carroll Pearce of Rosebud was placed in charge and assistants were Lee Phillips of Marlin, Willie Ed Jones of Chilton, and Frank Lawless of Lott. Before the train left, the local Chapter of the Red Cross served sandwiches and Dr. L. P. Robertson, chairman of the Selective Service Exemption Board, spoke. Again leaves were taken as mothers, fathers, sisters, brothers, sweethearts and friends bade the men God-speed. The train headed south for Camp Travis, whistled for crossings and disappeared.

**FIRST INCREMENT OF NEGROES LEAVES.** On October 30, 1917, eighty Negroes, in charge of Zelos D. Warren, headed for Camp Travis. A large group of citizens was on hand to wish them God-speed. The men showed evidence of the widespread patriotism and willingness to serve which prevailed everywhere. In weeks following many other Negroes were made ready and went to training camps. Many fought in the battle zones.

**MANY SAW BATTLE SERVICE.** Many Falls County men saw battle service, particularly on the Western Front, where the tide of war was turned. Histories of their services, where they fought and in what divisions of the Army, Navy, and Air Corps cannot be reviewed in this brief history. As far as known, Falls County was represented by its young men in all branches of the service. A number gave their lives on the battle fields and many received wounds and disabilities, which they carried throughout their lives. A number were distinguished, receiving medals of honor, citations and promotions in the Service.

During the war an epidemic of influenza took the lives of some. It is impractical to record their names, since a complete list is not available. Even some of those who overcame the influenza were burdened with its disabling effects long afterwards. The disease was prevalent, too, on the home front and many Falls County people suffered, a number succumbing to its ravages. The epidemic was at its peak in the Fall of 1918.



**FIRST MEN TO GIVE THEIR LIVES IN BATTLE.** Perhaps, there is no definite way of proving who was the first to give his life for his country in the war by illness, or combat. The *Marlin Democrat*, September, 1918, edition, recorded that Irby Rice (Rabbit) Curry was "the first Falls County man to make the supreme sacrifice" in action in the battle zone. On September 4, 1918, Mr. and Mrs. O. E. Curry of Marlin, parents of Lieutenant Curry, received a message from the War Department, informing them that their son was killed in aerial combat in France August 10, 1918.

Memorial services were held in the First Baptist Church of Marlin Sunday, September 8th.

Lieutenant Curry was buried at Azy, a village south of Chateau in a bend of the Marne River, but later his remains were brought home to rest in Calvary Cemetery, Marlin.

On September 20, 1918, Mr. and Mrs. W. Z. Burke of Reagan received a message from the War Department that their son, Sergeant Walter Burke, died August 26, 1918, of wounds received in action on the western front (in France) as a member of the infantry of the Ninetieth Division. Sergeant Burke, the newspaper said, was the second Falls County man to make the supreme sacrifice on the battle front.

In honor of these men, the United Daughters of the Confederacy, September 25, 1918, endowed one bed (\$600.00) in Military Hospital, Number 1, at Nully, France, "in loving memory of Irby Rice Curry and Walter Burke." It is regretted the names of all, who took part in this homage to men who gave their lives, were not available. Members of the committee, recorded in the newspaper, were Mrs. W. A. Reed, chairman, Mrs. E. W. Bounds, Mrs. J. W. Spivey, Mrs. S. C. Johnson, Mrs. J. T. Batson, Miss Mae Hutchings, and Mrs. W. S. Burgess.

**CITATIONS AND HONORS BESTOWED.** Efforts were made (1946) to get a full list of soldiers and sailors, who received citation and medals for outstanding service in the war, but only a few were obtained. Since the full

list was not available, it was inappropriate to include in this history a few of them. A number of Falls County soldiers and sailors received merited honors and it is hoped they were recorded, permanently.

Among them, mention is made of three:

*John Morgan Currie* of Lott, son of Mr. and Mrs. Dave Mitchell Currie, who received the Croix de Guerre from the French Government for gallantry in action. He lost his life, September 12, 1918, and was buried in St. Mihiel Cemetery, Thiacourt Marthe et Moore, France.

*Dan Edwards*, son of Jeff Edwards of Mooreville, who enlisted while under age by special permission of his father. He was awarded the Congressional Medal of Honor, the Distinguished Service Cross and, the *Marlin Democrat* reported, was "decorated with 83 medals for bravery, military accomplishment and outstanding service. He received 55 wounds and lost an arm and a leg. In addition, he received medals and citations from foreign countries on the Allies' side of the World War." He received a number of military Commissions from the United States government and, also, from other countries. He was a Colonel in the Army at the time of his discharge.

*Lee V. Hunnicutt*, son of Mr. and Mrs. R. S. Hunnicutt of Marlin, received the Double Star Citation for gallantry in action in the great Battle of St. Mihiel in 1918; and a second Double Star Citation in the Battle of Meuse-Argonne of the same year, entitling him to wear the Oak Leaf Cluster on the Double Silver Star Medal. (As a Colonel, he served in World War II, with overseas service, and a son, Staff Sergeant Thomas R. Hunnicutt, made the supreme sacrifice in a bombing raid over Germany in World War II, receiving the Air Medal Oak Leaf Cluster. Another son served in World War II also.)

**PEOPLE COOPERATE IN WAR EFFORT.** The wave of patriotism and readiness to aid in the cause, among individuals and organizations, which came with the declaration of a "state of war," prevailed throughout Falls County during the conflict. Business and professional men and farmers joined hands to promote home-front essentials and maintain morale. Bond campaigns were carried out successfully. People bought cheerfully and women worked for the Red Cross and the promotion of production of food and feed.

**HOME GUARD FORMED.** The natural urge to defend home, industry and farms resulted in the assembling of a large group of men at the office of the Commercial Club in Marlin "to consider organization of a home guard." The assembly took place in April, only a few days after the nation was officially at war. George H. Carter was elected chairman, Rodney Donohoo, secretary, and a committee, M. M. Reese, G. W. Glass, and J. W. Hillen, was appointed "to aid in securing enlistments." J. P. Gardere, H. St. Clair, J. E. Smith, J. O. Simpson, F. M. Stallworth, J. W. Hillen, S. J. Stallworth, G. W. Glass, Hugh A. Chilton, M. M. Reese, A. B. Johnson, W. A. Miles, George Lewis, C. O. Moore, Frank Handelman, Harry Handelman, and Rodney Donohoo were present. "C. C. Wren and W. T. Goode were two members secured this morning," about forty having previously signed up for enlistment, it was reported at the meeting.

Immediate results of perfecting the organization were not recorded in the newspaper, but in August 28, 1918, one hundred fifteen officers and men were in "Company H, Texas National Guard, known as Tom Connally Rifles." C. B. Monday of Marlin was captain, J. W. Hillen of Marlin, First lieutenant, Will Lee Trice of Rosebud, second lieutenant; Herbert C. Chamberlain of Reagan, first sergeant; Ernest Cadenhead of Marlin, mess sergeant; and Godfrey S. Jennings of Kosse, Lee Moncrief of Marlin, Nathan A. Chamberlain of Kosse, Joe F. Adamik of Bremond, and August A. Engelke of Otto, sergeants.



Frank Handelman of Marlin said in 1946 the company drilled, each member equipped with a rifle, purchased by himself, and the company was ready for service when needed. It was disbanded soon after the war ended, he said.

**ENEMY ALIENS REGISTERED.** Following instructions from the government in February, 1918, Marlin's postmaster, J. G. Oltorf, began registration of aliens. It was a precautionary measure to assure and maintain loyalty in the nation's struggle against enemies. For Falls County, it was a matter of form. There were no evidences of subversive activities in the County, and unlike conditions in the big cities and coastal areas, every citizen was known to be above suspicion. Marlin's assistant postmaster in 1918 was Charles Robertson.

**DAYLIGHT SAVING—BOND PURCHASES—RESTRICTIONS.** In February, 1918, Daylight Saving was proclaimed by President Wilson, to begin on the last Sunday in March, 1918. Hands of all clocks were moved forward one hour.

Newspapers record that in March, 1918, the people of Lott raised an "Honor Flag" at a patriotic service, signifying that town had attained its quota in the Third Liberty Loan. Not long afterwards the "Honor Flag" was raised in Marlin, celebrating which a program was held, arranged by the women's committee, with Miss Hillie Hart Johnson as chairman. Judge Heffner was master of ceremonies. The County, at large, more than purchased the bonds allotted as its quota — \$360,000.00. During the war, government officials appealed for food and feed conservation and production. Falls County people responded and produced their share, abetted by the fertility of the soil.

A number of inconveniences were experienced, such as wheatless days and scarcities of foods and articles, which had been diverted to prosecution of war. In the fall of 1918, people were asked to contribute clothing to stricken people of the war zones and other unfortunate

people of Europe, suffering from shortages caused by war. Campaigns were successful and contributions of clothing were sent overseas.

**AMERICANS IN THE WAR.** The British, French, and other allied armies fought doggedly to stop the desperate attempts of the Central Powers to win the war quickly. The Central powers were meeting successes in their drive toward Paris. On March 23, 1918, the world was startled when the Germans fired on Paris from a distance of seventy-five miles with a mysterious cannon. A number of shells fell upon the city, causing death and damage and there were speculations over the "secret" and its consequences. But the gun proved ineffective and it was soon "silenced."

With adverses and difficulties morale of the Allies was considerably taxed. It was boosted when America entered the war. American soldiers, who were in London in 1918 said some of the first American troops to arrive overseas were paraded through the streets of English towns to boost morale.

American armies under command of General Foch were soon in the conflict. The first American troops landed in France, June 26, 1917, but it was July, 1918, before the full weight of American strength was felt by the Germans. On July 19, 1918, the Germans retreated across the Marne River and from September 12th to the 16th the great battle of St. Mihiel took place in which American troops, including men of Falls County, were engaged. Four days later, September 20, and lasting until November 11, the Germans, who had depreciated the armies of America "which wouldn't and couldn't fight," found themselves locked in deadly and fatal battle with the "un-professionals." The tide was turned and defeat for the Central Powers was inevitable.

**VICTORY IN SIGHT FOR THE ALLIES.** By November, 1918, confident Allied Nations sensed victory. It was known Germany and her allies were ready to surrender, but her generals and the government of Emperor Hohenzollern prolonged the war in hopes of gaining concessions in surrender.

November 7, 1918, the world was thrown into premature rejoicing when a United Press news report flashed, "Paris — Armistice Allies signed, eleven, morning: Hostilities, cease, two afternoon. Sedan taken, morning, by Americans." In many parts of the world, people celebrated with a frenzy of joy and happiness. But it was short-lived. The report was erroneous. Aside from a few people in Falls County the premature news was received with more hopefulness than celebration. Most people waited for confirmation, which not only failed to come, but later reports proved the former erroneous.

**WAR ENDS.** An Associated Press report received in Falls County at 4:00 A.M. Monday, November 11, 1918, read: "Washington, November 11, 1918 — World War was ended at six o'clock this morning, Washington time, with red revolution raging in Germany and with William Hohenzollern, former emperor, a fugitive from his native land — an official State Department said, 'The Armistice has been signed at five o'clock, Paris time, and hostilities cease at 11 o'clock this morning, Paris time.'"

A few hours later, another report read: "Washington, November 11 — By order of President Wilson, General Crowder today directed the cancellation of all outstanding draft calls, stopping the movement during the next five days of two hundred and fifty thousand men, and setting aside all November draft calls for over three hundred thousand men."

Upon receipt of this official news, a day of celebration, rejoicing, and thanksgiving, was set aside for all America. Extra newspapers were on the street of Marlin by daylight and at nine o'clock, a giant procession formed at the school building led by the Marlin High School band, the fire department, automobiles, and people on foot. There were shouts of joy, sounds of automobile horns, whistles, and church bells. Red, white, and blue colors were everywhere. There were smiles and tears of joy. Business houses closed, a holiday was declared and a prayer, praise and thanksgiving service was held



at the First Presbyterian Church. It opened with singing of "America" and prayer by D. H. Boyles, former Falls County Judge. Addresses were made by the Reverend C. G. Howard, pastor of the First Baptist Church of Marlin, W. F. Bryan, Dr. J. W. Torbett, Sr., Superintendent A. C. Ferguson of the Marlin schools, G. W. Glass, Bob Ingersoll, Evangelist O'Hair, Dr. J. E. James and others. The band and the school's glee club gave patriotic music intermittently and the program ended with singing the "Star Spangled Banner." A short time later, the program was repeated at the school building.

For the rest of the day, November 11, 1918, prayers, rejoicing, family celebrations and thanks to Providence that America had come through its great test and trial victoriously, occupied the minds and hearts of the people. Naturally, there were visions of returning loved-ones, many miles away — fighting for God, home and country.

**SOLDIERS RETURN FROM WORLD WAR I.** According to the Second Report of the U. S. Provost Marshall General to the Secretary of War, on operations of the Selective Service System, to December 20, 1918, the first registration of Falls County men for prospective service in the Army and Navy showed 3,802 men. Of course, other young men were coming of age and for other reasons, other registrations were held. In June and August, 1918, 535 men registered in Falls County and on September 12, 1918, 3,786 more registered. This brought the Falls County total of 8,123. Many were exempt from service under classifications list elsewhere in this volume. The number of Falls County men, who were inducted into service, according to the Provost Marshall General, was 1,250. In addition, many volunteered in various departments of both Army and Navy, and it is impractical to know the exact number who served. Various estimates were made from 1,500 to 2,200.

Demobilization of nearly two and a quarter million men began within weeks after the Armistice, November 11, 1918. According to reports, released by the War Department, published in the *Marlin Democrat*,

Americans who lost their lives in battle, from wounds, accident and disease number 52,171; 179,625 were wounded; 2,168 were prisoners; 1,160 were missing. This brought total casualties to 235,117 not including of course, those disabled by the service, their lives shortened.

It is impractical to include in this book the names of Falls County heroes, who paid the supreme sacrifice and were wounded or disabled, because they are not available. Veterans, suffering from wounds and after effects of disease and illness, preferred to keep their physical conditions secret.

**MEN RETURN SINGLY AND IN SMALL GROUPS.** The men returned singly and in small groups, so that it was impractical for appreciative citizens to show them the honors they had earned. Each family, it is presumed, held its own celebration, or celebrations, for sons, husbands, fathers and mothers, daughters and sisters, for a number of women served at special war work.

After many of the veterans had returned, and somewhat re-adjusted themselves, a number met and organized a post of the American Legion. "Falls County Post Number 31" was organized prior to November 20, 1920, but on that date the organization's charter, or certificate of membership, in the National American Legion was issued. The Legion's purposes are set forth in the Preamble to its constitution, the members associating themselves together for "mutual helpfulness" and "perpetuation of memories and incidents of the great war," and, particularly, revering those who died in wars and working for the war wounded and disabled.

An American Legion Auxiliary, Unit Number 31, was organized in 1931, its charter dated March 16, 1931. In June, 1939, Sons of the American Legion, Falls County Post Number 31, was organized and the date of its charter is June 29, 1939.

In Rosebud the veterans organized and called their post "Brodie Lee Caywood Post, Number 329." Charter

for the Post was issued in 1921 and an American Legion Auxiliary, Unit Number 329, was organized in Rosebud in 1923.

On April, 1930, "J. Morgan Currie Post Number 58," was organized in Lott and in June of the same year the American Legion Auxiliary of the same post was organized, according to Helen Ruble Hailey's "History of Lott."



## CHAPTER XII

### Prosperity, Depression And Omens of Another War

**AFTER THE WORLD WAR OF 1917-18.** In any gigantic undertaking, such as the World War, in which much equipment, food and other supplies were needed, business was on a temporary boom. Business was good in Falls County. Farmers found ready markets for their products. laboring people had jobs and pay was good. Everyone was prosperous, despite scarcities and vexations.

A mild economic recession was felt in 1921 and 1922, but it passed quickly and business continued satisfactorily. Prices of cotton were high, although they had receded somewhat from those of 1919 and 1920, when farmers were thinking of "forty-cent cotton." Other farm products found satisfactory markets.

In the early 1920's, people became familiar with radio, although it was still in early stages of development. In various parts of the county electricians and home mechanics were buying parts and making their own "sets." A number of enterprising ones made them for public sale, finding ready markets. The early radios required aërials, usually strung high outside residences and places of business, letting it be known who owned radios. It was recalled that much of the entertainment was "finding stations." The novelty of hearing voices and music coming from far away places was equal to the entertainment coming from the "speakers."

Sometimes enterprising stores and dealers found it "good advertising," and profitable, to have radios, around which people gathered for important broadcasts of speeches, athletic events and musical programs. Few, if any, factory-made radios were on the market, until after the middle 1920's when manufacturers and their technical skill went into production.

**KU KLUX KLAN IN FALLS COUNTY.** It is not known when the Ku Klux Klan arrived in Falls County, or how many members it had, but in the early 1920's it manifested itself dramatically and wielded considerable influence. What the modern Ku Klux Klan signified, its objectives and what its "inner" activities were, only members knew. Those on the "outside" came to understand that the Klan stood for a self-defined Americanism, excluding certain races and setting up a code in variance with tolerance, religious freedom and moral ethics, not adusted by legal processes. They thought of Klan members as people wearing long white robes, concealing their identities on parade, or at, or going to, meeting places. They saw fiery red crosses, marking and dramatizing assemblies in some exclusive and guarded place.

The Klan stirred differences of opinion in many sections of the nation, resulting in hatreds, even outbursts of violence. In the county the Klan was short lived and in 1946 references to memberships in it were in lighter vein. In the county its political influence was not as impressive as it was in Texas, as a whole, when, in 1924, run-off elections were necessary to decide issues. Its influences in Texas also declined, but in some states it was potent in 1946.

**ADVENT OF SOUND PICTURES.** Scientific developments came, and continue to come, and it was impossible to keep up with all of them, or record them. The advent of sound-pictures deserves mentioning. As far as known the first sound-pictures ("talking pictures") to be shown in the county, were shown at the Palace Theater in Marlin in 1926 or 1927. Previously, of course, some had seen the pictures, in which appeared the likenesses of people, talking, singing or playing instruments and of other objects, moving and making noises.

In order to exhibit the pictures properly, it was necessary to re-design the interior of the theater for better acoustics — to prevent echoes from ceiling and walls distorting sounds which came from the screen. Interior of the Palace Theater was remodeled, its walls and ceiling cushioned to prevent echoes, and, after some experi-

mentation with early sound recording and reproducing equipment, moving pictures, accompanied by realistic conversation, music and other sounds, replaced the former "flickers" of the "movies." J. C. Chatmas, Sr., owner and manager of the theater, said sounds are recorded on the same film upon which pictures are recorded, and are reproduced by a beam of light projected upon the recording edge of the film, amplified in a manner similar to that of modern radios.

### CONSERVATISM IN GOVERNMENT AFTER THE WAR.

Veterans of the World War were making headway readjusting themselves to civilian life and business, including farming, was active, even prosperous. Democratic President Wilson, in efforts to have this nation become a member and leader on the League of Nations, impaired his health and died. Isolationists prevented the United States joining the League, which was conceived to prevent future wars.

In 1921 Warren G. Harding, a Republican, became president and was succeeded by other Republican presidents, including Herbert Hoover, who was inaugurated in 1929. Texas' electoral vote went to Mr. Hoover in opposition to the Democratic nominee, Alfred E. Smith.

**DEPRESSION OF THE 1930'S.** Not long after Mr. Hoover became President, a great depression fell over the nation. Government conservatism prevented government efforts to alleviate its effects. Leaders sought to encourage the people, when business slumped and unemployment became widespread, with such slogans as "Prosperity is just around the corner," "Two cars in every garage," and others. Prices continued to decline, unemployment mounted and business and bank failures climbed.

The severe depression was uncomfortable to everyone in Falls County and disastrous to some. One of Marlin's banks was forced to close its doors, affecting the stability of numbers of farmers and business institutions, one of which was the Home Benefit Association, organized and managed by Michael S. Hunt and doing a big business



in the county and over a wide radius. Much through the efforts of Mr. Hunt, G. W. Glass, vice-president of the bank, and United States Senator Tom Connally, another bank was organized to replace the one that had closed its doors. Other Falls County banks were sorely tried and one was dissolved.

**EFFORTS TO RELIEVE DEPRESSION WOES.** Conditions grew gloomier, because of economic conditions, and impatient people, who did not understand, waited patiently for another election at which to register their dissatisfaction at the polls.

Franklin Delano Roosevelt, former governor of New York and having served important posts in the national government, was the nominee of the Democratic party for president. Adopting a slogan of a "New Deal," the Democrats won and Mr. Roosevelt was inaugurated in 1933. Immediately, he declared a bank-holiday and set in motion plans for government assistance for businesses and people.

Throughout the depression, Falls County people were patient. Farmers studied scientific farming and marketing methods, with the aid of the county agricultural and home demonstrations agents and others. Being Democratic, they were pleased with the election of a Democratic president and held hopes for solution of their economic dilemma.

**"THREE-LETTER" ORGANIZATIONS.** Efforts of the government to relieve the crisis, brought into existence a number of organizations, which came to be referred to by letters. Most of them were identified by three letters, including the "Triple A," AAA (Agricultural Adjustment Administration) and the PWA (Public Works Administration). The AAA and the WPA (Works Progress Administration) were "three-letter" organizations, with which Falls County people became most familiar in the 1930's.

Description of the complicated government plan is inappropriate here. W. I. Ross, Falls County agricultural agent, said (1946) that farmers will long remember

the AAA (and others, some considered very beneficial) and WPA for their effects upon farm work and practices. Particularly, will they remember the "plow up" exigency of 1933, he said, and, with less acuteness, the "hog and cattle killing" of 1934. The "plow up" referred to a requirement that farmers plow up some of their cotton, in amounts up to every third row, the purpose being to reduce yield in view of a world cotton surplus. Farmers had an aversion to "plowing up good cotton," even if the world did have too much. Hadn't they labored to plow, plant and cultivate it? The "cattle and hog killing" referred to the disposal of hogs and cattle, according to special requirements, for the same reason. Since Falls County was primarily a cotton-producing county, the "plow up" program left more lasting memories than "cattle and hog killing."

Mr. Ross said farmers will also remember the depression because so many laborers left the farms and moved to the towns to take advantage of work offered by WPA (Works Progress Administration).

WPA was deemed necessary, not only from a humanitarian standpoint, but for stability of society and the nation, since unemployment and unrest was widespread. The government was averse to relief by doles and instituted a system of providing work projects, the government paying wages of the laborers. The system was in operation in Falls County and a number of worthwhile public improvements, such as schoolhouses, streets, roads, and others, were provided. On the other hand, many, particularly those whose laborers on farms and in business quit their jobs and got on a WPA project, were critical of WPA, especially, when the project appeared unnecessary, of temporary value, or simply "made" work. To them it also appeared that many workers on the WPA projects, did not take their work seriously, "leaned upon shovels," and otherwise "put in time," failing to give "value-received" in return for their wages.

Other "three-letter" organizations (some had more than three) came into widespread use, among them being FSA, REA, CCC, ACA, PWA, FHA, RFC, CAA, and others.

The Rural Electrification Administration (REA), created in 1935, enabled many Falls County farms to have electric lights and power — farms never supplied with electricity before. Lines were run to many sections of the county in the late 1930's and early 1940's, and extensions continued. With federal assistance, Falls County built its 1939 court house. A number of school-houses were built with federal assistance — and streets and roads were improved. Cities of Lott, Marlin and Rosebud, obtained assistance for public improvements.

**DEMOCRATIC ADMINISTRATION CRITICISED.** Sharp criticisms were heaped upon the Democratic Administration and the President for "government spending" and "impractical and harmful" practices, but President Roosevelt was renominated by the Democrats and re-elected for a second term. The "three-letter" (and other) organizations continued to function and people seemed to emerge from the depression. Farmers, perhaps, driven to it by labor shortages, caused by WPA, and, later, other reasons, turned more and more to mechanical farming. Cotton continued to be a major crop, but diversification was practiced and stock-raising received added interest.

President Roosevelt and the Democratic Administration had broken a number of precedents, all of which brought approval and disapproval. He was destined to break others, including being elected for a third term, then, for a fourth. The great World War II, however, was undoubtedly the determining factor in breaking the latter precedents.

**CLOUDS OF WAR AGAIN.** In the middle 1930's, Americans began watching with wary eyes political trends in Europe and the growth of an ideology in some countries diametrically opposed to democratic principles. Germany was recovering from defeat in the World War and, at the same time, falling under the spell of militaristic despots.

A corporal in the World War, Adolph Hitler, had led a revolt in Bavaria in 1923, when "Beer Putschists"



marched on Munich and a number were killed and Hitler imprisoned. Ten years later, however, he managed to become chancellor of Germany (1933) and leader of the National Socialist party (Nazis). Soon thereafter he proscribed all parties except the Nazis, quit the League of Nations, withdrew from the armament conference and Germany entered upon a ruthless program of dictatorship, armament, militarism, and persecution of "inferior" people. In August, 1934, the German people approved consolidation of the offices of President and Chancellor, creating a new office, Leader-Chancellor. Hitler was Leader-Chancellor, although he became better known as the "Fuehrer." Within a short time, as absolute dictator of Germany, he entered upon a program of prosecution of the Jews and other "inferior" people and glorified Teutonic supremacy, proclaiming Germans were destined to rule the world.

While Hitler was making himself absolute dictator in Germany, Benito Mussolini was making himself dictator of Italy, as Premier and head of the Fascist Party. He became better known as "Il Duce." The friendship between Hitler and Mussolini was natural, since their ideals and objectives were the same. Mussolini engaged in a war with Ethiopia and further glorified himself and boosted the sense of conquer of his people by overrunning the primitive Ethiopians, and their emperor, Haile Selassie. Impotency of the League of Nations was proven when Emperor Selassie appealed to it in vain.

In 1936 the Rome-Berlin Axis was formed and late in 1937, Italy, like Germany, withdrew from the League of Nations. It is generally conceded that the sanguinary Spanish Civil War, which began in 1936 and ended late in March, 1939, with victory for still another dictator, General Francisco Franco, was testing ground for Hitler and Mussolini in their schemes for world conquest. Whether this is true or not, subsequently the greatest and most disastrous war in history began.

**EFFORTS TO AVOID WAR.** Along with the entire nation, the people of Falls County watched uneasily the ominous events leading to the second World War. On

September 3, 1939, England's Prime Minister Neville Chamberlain announced to Parliament that "a state of war exists between Great Britain and Germany." Soon other nations were involved in the mighty conflict.

Immediately, President Roosevelt proclaimed this nation's neutrality and, with Congress, set to work to preserve that neutrality and a dignified peace. The nation was aware that the ideologies of Fuehrer Hitler and Il Duce Mussolini were alarming and their military strength and ruthlessness was something with which to reckon. There were depressing apprehensions of insecurity.

There were variances of opinion over the peace effort. Hitler had proven that attainment of one concession only led to other demands, some of far reaching consequences. "Appeasement" and its definition brought differences. Some people of Falls County believed "one cannot appease a dictator like Hitler," and others, "there are better chances for peace by granting this, or that concession."

Congress passed laws forbidding American ships to sail in the war areas and to arm for defense. An embargo act, too, was passed, making it illegal for American ships to carry arms and ammunition. Despite these efforts, incidents in violation of international shipping laws occurred, and the State Department was kept busy adjusting complications arising from them.

**WORLD CONDITIONS INCREASE COMPLICATIONS.** Added to difficulties of convincing the Axis Powers of neutrality, it appeared to this country that the dictators were disregarding agreements and promises and headed for world conquest, with designs upon America. Their fully-equipped and trained German armies rolled successfully toward Paris and Belgium, having already practically annihilated Poland. By the end of May, 1940, Belgium had surrendered and some Belgian troops, British forces in Flanders and some French were forced to Dunkerque, from whence most of them miraculously escaped to England.

A few days later (June 10th) Mussolini decided it was time to strike, declared war on England and France

and attacked France unexpectedly on its southern border, to which President Roosevelt referred as "a stab in the back." Four days later the Germans were in Paris and France was prostrate. (A few of France's military men escaped, including General Charles DeGualle, who later led a recruited army of French as one of the Allies). By the end of June, 1940, France was not only out of the war, but practically an ally of the Axis Powers.

**NEED FOR DEFENSE.** Provoked by the dictatorial ideologies of the apparently victorious Hitler and Mussolini and aroused over their boasts and appearances of world conquest designs, national leaders, by the middle of 1940, saw the need for national defense—both for psychological and practical reasons. In June, 1940, the President signed a bill calling for registering and fingerprinting of aliens in the United States, estimated at 3,500,000. In Falls County, registrations and fingerprinting began at the Marlin Post Office.

As in World War I, the work was simply a matter of form, for the few aliens in the county were known to be loyal Americans, most of whom had lived in the county for years and simply had not completed their naturalization.

Again differences arose over the necessity for compulsory military training, although voluntary enlistments to attain adequate Army and Navy strength was tried and had failed. In September, 1940, the Selective Service and Training Act was passed by Congress, and on October 29, 1940, the first peace-time military compulsory military service in the history of the nation was inaugurated when the Secretary of War, blind-folded, drew the number, 158, from a glass bowl at Washington—the first of 16,313,240 cards for young men, 21 to 25, who had registered under the Act.

**COUNTY SELECTIVE SERVICE BOARDS.** Early in October, 1940, the Governor of Texas had appointed personnel of two Selective Service Boards for the county: for Board No. 1, Cecil R. Glass, George S. Buchanan, and G. H. Olinger, all of Marlin; for Board No. 2, Rolla G.



Hailey of Lott, Ross Stricklin of Reagan, and Sim C. Souther of Rosebud. The first registration of Falls County men was held October 16, 1940, and on the following day, the Boards were organized with Mr. Glass, chairman of Board Number 1 and Mr. Buchanan, secretary; and Mr. Hailey, chairman, and Mr. Stricklin, secretary, of Board Number 2. Immediately, offices were established with Mrs. Oma Steede, chief clerk for Board Number 1, and Miss Henrietta Robertson (who later became Mrs. John C. Patterson) chief clerk for Board Number 2. Assisting the chief clerks at various times were Mrs. Katherine Thomas and Misses Pearle Hunnicutt, Martha Louise Cousins, Evelyn Forrest, and Pollyanna Woodland and others for brief periods.

Personnel of the Boards was unchanged until January, 1942, when Mr. Stricklin resigned because of ill-health, and was succeeded by Frank R. Phillips of Perry. In April, 1944, Mr. Buchanan resigned to enter service in the American Red Cross, training at Washington, D.C., after which he was assigned for about a month to Jefferson Barracks, Missouri, going thence to Camp Hood, Texas, as Assistant Field Director for the American Red Cross. In September, 1944, Mr. Hailey resigned on account of his health and Frank Mees of Barclay was appointed. Mr. Souther became chairman of Board Number 2 and Mr. Phillips, its secretary. In May, 1946, Mr. Glass died and the vacancy on Board Number 1 was filled by appointment of Ed McCullough of Mooreville and Marlin. Mr. Olinger became chairman of that Board and Mr. McCullough, secretary. Both Boards continued in service through 1946, and members who had completed two years of continuous service were presented, by the President of United States, medals of service, resembling the Distinguished Air Medal, including color and ribbon arrangement.

Service on the Selective Service Boards was without pay and brought a number of vexations for the members, but it was considered a highly essential service and the entire personnel received commendations of citizens, service clubs, and the public generally.

**DUTIES OF THE BOARDS.** After the men had registered under the Selective Service Act, they were sent questionnaires by the Boards, upon which they furnished information for establishment of their liability for service. From the information on the questionnaires they were classified into four major classes, namely, Class I, II, III, and IV. These classes referred to their marital and dependency status, their physical condition and their need on the home-front for essential industry and profession. (There were divisions of each of the major classes, but mention of the major classes, only, is made here.) While information on the questionnaires, as a rule, established classifications, frequently, the Boards, in line of duty, were called upon to establish them, according to the regulations, when misunderstandings and errors arose. The Boards, also by regulations, supervised the order in which the men were called into service, taking into consideration the number of volunteer enlistments credited to the county and numbers of men required in the county's quotas under the various "calls."

Five registrations were held during the war emergency and practically every family in the county furnished registrants. "The county was literally drained for eligible men for the Armed Forces," a member of the Board said.

**ADVISORY BOARD ASSISTS.** Under the plan of Selective Service, an Advisory Board for Registrants was established, with members of which the men consulted in their Selective Service problems. District Judge Terry Dickens was appointed chairman of the Board by the Governor, and other members were: for—

Rosebud—Sim C. Souther, Roy Freeman, J. R. Killgore, Tony Beinhaur  
Lott—C. G. Kelly, R. E. Lindsey, D. P. Shore

Durango—Lee Farmer, R. B. Smith

Westphalia—Reverend R. P. Schertz, George Ranly

Blevins—J. E. Bowers, C. D. Stone

North Prairie—J. M. Burns

Eddy—W. C. Tisdale, O. L. Bowers

Chilton—Roy Levy, Boyd Adams, E. F. Baxter, Dee Birks

Cedar Springs—Reed Watkins, Edd Good, J. W. Burton, C. M. Mears

Barclay—Frank Mees, Raymond Stock (Mr. Mees later served on the Selective Service Board.)

Wilson—A. Vickers, F. J. Neinast

Highbank—Joe Falsone, Guy Stricklin

Travis—Emil Adams, W. B. Hodges  
 Reagan—H. T. Davison, Z. A. Burke, Horne Kirkpatrick  
 Dott—T. J. Birkes  
 Wilderville—C. B. Evans, L. V. Pearson  
 Grusendorf—George Grote, Alvin Haug  
 McClanahan—T. J. Honeycutt, J. C. Saxon  
 Stranger—C. R. Brothers, R. C. Davis  
 North Corner—W. J. Walker, A. C. Bennett  
 Woodland—J. S. Henderson, F. A. Tate  
 Alto Springs—C. E. Fenner, O. G. Kelly  
 Mettina—Henry Kuehne, W. H. Ludwig  
 McCaleb—Bruno Olexy, Bruno Grych  
 Mustang—Joe Johnson, T. O. Pamphlin  
 Eureka—L. W. Erskine, J. H. Moseley  
 Otto—Ben Dryer, Travis Powers  
 Perry—O. A. Barton, W. T. Crites, R. A. Neumann, C. W. Kluck  
 Bellfalls—W. J. Rector  
 Cego—J. L. McKee, W. B. Sorrels, John Frosch  
 Satin—A. C. Bickers, Will Walker, W. H. Lewis, J. R. Baxley  
 Mooreville—L. M. Newman, J. W. Burks, Anson Jones  
 Marlin—C. R. Glass, R. D. Peterson, Prentice Oltorf, Ben Rice, John  
 Patterson, Charles Reagan, C. M. Pearce, George Carter, Z. W.  
 Bartlett, Homer Henderson, T. B. Bartlett, Sr., W. E. Rogers,  
 Miss Marjorie Rogers, Robert Carter, Sam Dollahite, Fred Glass,  
 C. A. McCoy, W. W. Denard, Marcus Criswell; the Reverends W. O.  
 Wright, J. M. Gordon, F. P. Goddard, S. L. Kmiecik, V. H. Smith,  
 J. L. Spears, George Beyer; Dr. N. D. Buie, Dr. J. W. Torbett, Sr.

**GOVERNMENT APPEALS AGENT.** Further, to assure the men in their rights under the Selective Service and Training Act, local Government Appeals Agents were appointed, namely, George H. Carter, for Board Number 1 and Prentice Oltorf, for Board Number 2.

**EARLY CALL FOR MEN.** When it was evident the nation needed young men for defense, many volunteered from Falls County, but it is impossible to record (or know) their names, nor those who enlisted first. The first men called under the Selective Service and Training Act went to Dallas, Texas, for induction into Service, November 20, 1940. M. C. Austin Fields of Lott was considered the first inductee and others were Marvine Allen Payne (Negro), Bill Bridger, and George Staman.

The second group of inductees went to Dallas, January 23, 1941. They were Thomas W. Adams, H. O. Dickey, Finis E. Taylor, Louis A. Parsons, Alva E. McCoy, Mike K. Bielamowicz, Edward M. Czajkoski, Lige J. Bielamowicz, Harvey L. Polk, James M. Curry, and Robert K. Guest.



Thereafter, many young men entered the Service for Defense, and the number and speed of induction increased when this nation became one of the belligerents.

**CIVILIANS STIRRED TO DEFENSE.** Citizens of the county, perhaps, did not realize the full urgency of needs for defense, as did government, Army and Navy and State Department officials, who were in closer touch with world events and trends, but they felt concerned over the advances of the ideologies of Hitler, Mussolini, and the Japanese militarists. They felt concerned over victories of the dictators and their use of force to intimidate and subjugate helpless people. They sensed danger to the American way of life, and while they differed over details for defense, they realized the time had arrived for alertness and preparedness. Especially, were they brought to this realization when their young men were called for compulsory military service and, perhaps, unknown destinies.

**TEXAS STATE GUARD ORGANIZED.** In November, 1940, Falls County Post Number 31, American Legion, voted in favor of sponsoring organization of a "Texas Defense Guard." On March 24, 1941, a company, known as "Company D," was organized with C. S. Cousins, captain, B. C. Segrest, first lieutenant, and H. V. Sutherland, second lieutenant. In months following, an infantry training program was engaged in covering close-order drill, bayonet, infiltration, hand-to-hand combat, target practice, smoke and gas, riot, and mob control and other subjects.

It was the plan of the company to assist in emergencies the Army and help prevent and control riots and uprisings. In 1943, legislative action changed the name from the "Texas Defense Guard" to "Texas State Guard," as emphasis shifted from home defense to internal security.

A number of instructors from the Army assisted in training the Company, which also went to Camp Hood

(Texas) to observe and take part in training there. The training was considered beneficial to scores of young men, who afterwards entered the Armed Forces. More than two hundred and ninety men were members of the Company at different times. In addition to the original commissioner officers, were Captain W. R. Manor, First Lieutenant D. D. Lippard, and Second Lieutenant Robert P. Hall, and Second Lieutenant Petty Dunlap. First Sergeants at various times were Shaw J. Spencer, the Reverend F. P. Goddard and Robert D. Peterson.

After five years, lacking less than a week, the Company was inactivated, announced by Captain Manor at a barbeque at Tomlinson Hill in October, 1945. The company was officially disbanded October 31, 1945.

Late in July, 1941, Brodie Lee Cavwood Post of the American Legion of Rosebud, called an assembly, at which organization of a unit of Home Defense Guard was considered. M. A. Mayer of Rosebud presided and the assembly voted to organize and elected Sim C. South-er, captain, Lawrence R. Parks, first lieutenant, and John W. Montford, second lieutenant. However, young men were already going to the Armed Forces (later, more frequently, and in larger numbers) and the Company was never organized.

Fortunately, Falls County and vicinity had no need to call upon home guard companies, all of which was further evidence of loyalty and unity of purpose during the war.

**DEFENSE BONDS CAMPAIGN.** People sympathized with British civilians in the spring of 1941, when German airplanes were dropping tons of explosives upon the Isles and laying waste to cities and killing and maiming citizens. Scrap metal became valuable and people of the County joined the nation in collecting iron and aluminum to be converted to weapons for defense and war. In May, 1941, the first Defense Bonds were offered for sale and at the Marlin Post Office, the first receiving

bonds at the windows being J. C. Chatmas, Sr., Mayor J. M. Kennedy, of Marlin, United States Senator Tom Connally of Falls County, Dr. E. P. Hutchings and Dr. T. G. Glass, County chairman for the campaign to promote bond sales. In May, also, buyers were in the County to purchase horses for the Army.

**OTHER ACTIVITIES FOR DEFENSE.** In May, 1941, the government set the following July 1st as date for registration of an estimated 1,000,000 young men, who had attained the age of twenty-one, since the first registration in October, 1940. Also volunteer First Aid lectures and instructions were held under auspices of county officials, the Red Cross, and other organizations.

In June, the National Defense Committee, appointed several months previously, began disseminating information for use in emergencies. Personnel of the committee, according to *The Marlin Democrat*, included C. R. Glass, general chairman, H. J. McIlhany, S. D. Williford, Nathan Levy, H. D. Rush, W. I. Ross, Elgin Tubb, Claude Reaves, Carter Hicks, J. M. Kennedy, H. B. Rice, B. C. Segrest, C. A. McCoy, L. O. Hay, J. D. Houston, Dr. J. I. Collier, Mrs. Shaw (Annie Mae) Spencer, Judge John Patterson, the Reverends C. L. Williams and Joe L. Spears, Dr. Walter S. Smith, Robert Carter, Mrs. Henrietta Signor, Levi Goodrich and George Buchanan, secretary.

In July the Negroes held a defense meeting at the Marlin Baptist Church, with the pastor, Reverend L. J. Jackson, presiding, and C. A. Wyman, publicity agent. W. K. Robertson was elected director for the Negroes and a few days later Robertson announced committees to assist.

Apparently, the National Defense Committee was preliminary, for in July, 1941, the Commissioners Court formed the Falls County National Defense Council names of members of which appear in the minutes of the Court. The members were Judge John Patterson,



chairman; Commissioners M. M. Allen, Tom Kelly, Jr., G. H. Asbury, and A. L. Pitman; Sanford Hancock, secretary of the Council; Mayor J. M. Kennedy of Marlin, C. R. Glass, G. S. Buchanan, G. H. Olinger, Dr. J. W. Torbett, Judge Terry Dickens, G. L. Hutchings, Dr. N. D. Buie, Sterling Osborn, Frank Handelman, J. B. Billingsley, L. O. Hay, C. E. Reagan, George Langford, M. A. Dowis, E. L. Walston, Levi Goodrich, C. S. Cousins, Mayor Jack Tarver of Rosebud, Tony Beinhauer, Lawrence Parks, J. R. Glass, S. C. Souther, Bill Beckworth, Howard Linn, W. I. Ross, John Montford, J. R. Killgore, Mayor W. G. Ruble of Lott, Rolla Hailey, Roy Levy, Buster Thomas, Vic Walker, Lucian Davis, O. L. Bowers, W. I. Allen, Henry Greener, A. J. Boyd, Walter Rector, Bob Lewis, Ross Stricklin, T. A. Robbins, John Schneider, Jasper Caddell, R. A. Neumann, N. E. Honeycutt, Frank LaBarbera, J. L. Springfield, Jack Brothers, Louis Pearson, Raymond Stock, R. E. Menefee and O. T. Williams.

**AIRCRAFT WARNING COUNCIL ORGANIZED.** In view of the tragedy befalling England and other countries, resulting from bombs dropped from enemy airplanes, and realizing "it can happen here," an organization was set up in the United States to be prepared for air raids. The organization's purpose was two-fold, namely, to warn the people of approaching danger and set in motion counter measures of the defense Army, to destroy the attackers, or drive them away.

On the Falls County Aircraft Warning Council, the Commissioners Court appointed the following to serve with the members of the Court, the Judge being chairman of the council; Roy Eddins, Mayor J. M. Kennedy of Marlin, Mayor Jack Tarver of Rosebud, Mayor W. G. Ruble of Lott, Roy Johnson, T. R. Depew, J. R. Killgore, M. A. Mayer, Robert Souther, H. B. Rice, J. P. Stacey, Sterling Osborn, O. N. Campbell, Aaron McKnight, Ike Handelman, Dr. H. E. Hipps, Roy Storey, Conally Gwyn, F. L. Hodges, S. A. Davison, T. A.

Robbins, Woodrow Powers, E. J. Holze, Alex Scheef, A. C. Bickers, R. K. Burkes, Dr. B. A. Jansing, Robert LaBarbera, Bruno Zan, Jack Brothers, J. C. Kennedy, Jess Saxon, Reed Watkins, J. M. Burns, Ed Jones, Clint Jaques and E. R. Scott.

**AIRCRAFT WARNING SYSTEM.** A minimum of publicity was given to the system, whereby the people and the Army were warned of approaching enemy airplanes. A number of "observations posts" were established in the county, at which volunteer "observers" were on duty at specified hours, twenty-four hours of the day, in times of danger. The observers, referred to as the "eyes and ears of the Army," were on the alert, to detect enemy and friendly airplanes, both by their appearance and sound of their engines.

Details of the intricate system, which County Judge Patterson said was patterned after the plan employed effectively in England, were not known. Observers on duty were given the following instructions: At the approach of enemy or unknown airplanes, go to the telephone and call "Army flash." The call took precedence over all others at the telephone exchange and operators "rushed through" connections with proper authorities, to whom the observer reported the number of airplanes seen, or heard, their locations with reference to the observation post, direction of flights, their height, types of planes, makes, etc., and other prescribed information. At the various "centers" (with which the observers communicated) maps and reports from other observations posts — all over the nation — enabled Army officials to determine apparent destinations of the airplanes and time of their arrivals at probable targets. At proper times, in co-operation with county and city officials, warnings were sounded and people, trained by defense officials, the Red Cross and other organizations, repaired to "bomb shelters" or places of greater safety. At the same time, Army officials set in motion Army defense measures, including combat airplanes and anti-aircraft guns, sending them to destroy or drive away the attackers. Civilians, also, were trained in what to do with unexploded

bombs, fires, and falling walls; also in first aid, minimizing fire dangers and losses and how to prevent and allay panic.

Fortunately, no bombs fell, except a few "balloon bombs" near the West Coast, reportedly floated over from Japan by natural, high-altitude air-currents. Their damage was negligible.

Naturally, Falls County suffered no air raids and the Falls County Aircraft Warning Service was precautionary and essential for completion of the nation's network.

Eighteen Observation Posts were made ready for service beginning October 1, 1941, even before the nation was at war. Personnel of the observers were not known during the war emergency, nor was it known where the posts were located. Chief observers, upon whom rested responsibility for instant service, were: R. A. Neumann, Ike Handelman, P. P. Bridgewater, Mrs. M. C. Evans, E. J. Holze, Jack Brothers, W. N. Cargill, John Westbrook, William Watkins, C. L. Trice, O. T. Watkins, Louie Pierson, B. A. Mears, Johnny Payne, John S. Cobb, Hal Storey, Lucian Davis and B. C. Stricklin. Others served as chief observers at times, but their names were not available.

**EFFORTS FOR THOSE IN ARMED FORCES.** Late in September, 1941, a campaign for the United Service Organization (USO) began with Miss Marjorie Rogers, county chairman. The organization's purpose was to be of service to men and women of the Armed Forces, including entertainments and "off duty recreation," essential to maintaining morale. At intervals, people responded to calls for contributions beneficial to personnel of the Armed Forces and, by 1943, it was deemed advisable to resolve all campaigns into one and provide therein, funds for all worthy aids to the Armed Forces. Three campaigns, known as the U. S. War Fund Campaigns, were conducted. O. N. Campbell was general chairman in 1943; Clift Epps, in 1944; and N. V. Doyle in 1945, the last War Fund Campaign. In 1946, Frank Latham was county chairman for a campaign for the USO.



**OMENS OF WAR INCREASE.** Late in October, 1941, United States Senator Tom Connally, chairman of the Senate Foreign Relations Committee, opened debate in the Senate for changes in the Neutrality Law. It is not necessary here to understand the Law, or suggested changes, in view of progress and boastfulness of the dictators. The United States grew more and more alarmed and changes were desired to enable American ships to transport supplies according to their rights on the seas. The so-called "Neutrality Law" was considered "leaning backwards" to avoid involvement in a war, which seemed inevitable, anyway.



U. S. SENATOR TOM CONNALLY  
OF FALLS COUNTY

Throughout the nation, leaders and citizens worked for and promoted defense measures. A week before Armistice Day, President Roosevelt proclaimed November 11th to 16th "Civilian Defense Week." Complications with Japan arose and a special envoy, Saburo Kurusu, headed for Washington, "bearing an imperially approved formula for peaceful settlement of Japanese-American problems." Prime Minister Winston Churchill of Great Britain, observing complications, said, "We do not know whether the efforts of the United States to preserve peace in the Pacific will be successful. If the United States should become involved in war with Japan, a British declaration will follow within an hour. —War may soon spread over the remaining fourth of the globe."



## CHAPTER XIII

### Scientific World War II Strikes Heavily

"A DAY WHICH WILL LIVE IN INFAMY." The Japanese envoy arrived and, with Japanese Ambassador Nomura, entered into a series of ineffectual and delaying conferences with Secretary of State Cordell Hull and other officials.

People of Falls County (as did the nation) watched newspapers and radio broadcasts hopefully for news of settlement of the differences. A short time after lunch, Sunday, December 7, 1941, those tuned to broadcasts, heard the startling announcement, "Japanese airplanes, operating from nearby air-carriers, are attacking the American fleet in Pearl Harbor, Hawaii. Hundreds of American soldiers and sailors have been killed and wounded and others are under heavy fire. Large units of the fleet are sunk, sinking, or burning ——."

People were horrified, then enraged — and in that rage, full significance of the attack was momentarily overshadowed with anger and resolutions of revenge. Differences over defense and other measures paled into insignificance! The nation was united — in one tremendous, enraged resolution of retaliation and annihilation of those responsible for the "atrocities against peace-seeking people"!

The next day, December 8, after recounting losses in the "unprovoked and dastardly attack," and American efforts to preserve peace, President Roosevelt referred to the day as "a day which will live in infamy" and asked Congress for a declaration of war against Japan. The Senate voted 82 to 0 for the declaration and the House 388 to 1, the dissenting vote being by Congresswoman Rankin of Montana, who was among those who voted against the declaration of war on Germany in 1917.



Japan jubilantly claimed complete success including supremacy over the United States in the Pacific — all of which later proved idle boasting.

The *Marlin Democrat* recorded, "Falls County has personal interest in the war area of the Pacific. Falls County young men are in military service in U. S. possessions there and Falls County is assigned to go down in history as among the first to feel the effect of this war, as it happened in the first World War."

On December 11, 1941, Germany and Italy declared war on this nation and Congress promptly declared war on them, without a dissenting vote, although Congresswoman Rankin simply voted "present." Within a brief time, the entire nation was geared to production of war essentials and, as requested by President Roosevelt, became a veritable "arsenal of democracy."

**EARLY WAR EFFORTS.** As one, Americans rose to the mighty effort. Judge Patterson called an assembly of citizens from all parts of the county, heard reports of defense measures, found unity of purpose and that the Falls County Aircraft Warning Service was ready.

A few days later, Sheriff L. O. Hay announced appointment of Wardens for Civilian Defense as follows (according to *The Marlin Democrat*): for —

Marlin—W. S. Gray, M. L. Bridgewater, Lee Phillips

Perry—W. A. Reichle, Frank Phillips

McClanahan—Walter Glockzin, C. W. Webster

Stranger—J. S. Erskine

Alto Springs—W. G. Curry

Reagan—Hugh Kirkpatrick, J. W. Harwell

Durango—Nat McCleary, Robert E. Smith

Mooreville—Lucian Davis, R. K. Burks

Satin—A. C. Bickers, W. L. Dearen

Cedar Springs—Reed Watkins, Sam Jones

Wilderville—L. V. Pearson, Lee Ross

Travis—Giles Davis, F. M. Lemley

McCaleb—Anton Bienski

Westphalia—F. J. Buckholt, Henry Greener

Blevins—C. D. Stone

Chilton—R. A. Goelzer, C. E. Maxey

Eureka—L. W. Erskine

Mustang—Joe Johnson, Felix Zajac

Lott—Claude Asher, R. E. Ruble, R. L. Golding, J. E. Masters, Jr.  
Eddy—O. L. Bowers  
Rosebud—Joe Smilie, John W. Montford, Bill Beckworth  
North Corner—W. J. Walker  
Bellfalls—J. C. Jaques  
Cego—E. J. Herrington  
Otto—T. A. Powers, T. J. Brooks  
Wilson—A. A. Winkelman  
Dott—D. H. Pace  
Highbank—Frank LaBarbera

Following assemblies at which instructions were announced, tests were made in the cities of the county, including "black outs," meaning (in co-operation with utilities companies) all lights were turned off — darkness being a means of protection against air raids. Other practice tests, in events of emergencies, were held, in which highways to and from the county were guarded and traffic was escorted through to "assure safe passage."

Immediately after the declarations of war, a campaign to provide funds for the American Red Cross was held. E. B. Holloway was general chairman, and reported liberal support. Early after the campaign began, Robert Goelzer reported Chilton was "over the top" in its quota and, a few hours later, Jim Falsone reported Highbank had contributed its share. Other communities reported success, also.

**FALLS COUNTY TRUCKS REGISTERED.** In view of conversion of American industry to manufacture of war weapons and supplies, scarcities of many commodities were foreseen. Before the end of December, 1941, Governor Stevenson had called for registration of trucks, which might be needed for defense. Use of all motor vehicles was restricted and a volunteer registration was announced for January 15, 1942. However, by January 5, 1942, rationing of tires and tubes had begun and by the end of February rationing was rigid. Rationing was necessary, because the nation had lost its chief source of rubber, the Far East. (Immediately, development of synthetic rubber accelerated and, eventually shortages for war purposes were averted.)

**PRICE AND RATIONING BOARDS SET UP.** Scarcities of rubber, machinery, vehicles, sugar and other items,

required some citizens to be without them in order that they might go to more essential users. Rationing was inaugurated, first to conserve and distribute to the greatest advantage, and later, to prevent inflation.

In January, 1942, two Tire Rationing Boards were appointed by County Judge John Patterson and the Mayors of Marlin, Rosebud, and Lott. Members were, for Board Number 1, J. J. Gallaher, J. B. Lewis, and A. J. Heflin, although Mr. Heflin could not serve and J. T. Burkes of Reagan was appointed; for Board No. 2, the Reverend T. H. Vaughn of Rosebud, Conally Gwyn of Lott, and David DeGraffenreid of Chilton.

Miss Nelia Bouchillon (later, she was Mrs. Parker) was the first employee for the Boards, assuming duty, January 5, 1942.

Several changes in the plan were found necessary, as restrictions on other products became essential and the effort became more comprehensive under directives of the Office of Price Administration (OPA). Eventually, J. B. Lewis became general chairman of the Board, which was composed of several panels, each dealing with specific items. The following formed the personnel:

**Tires, Automobiles and Miscellaneous Products Panel**

Chairman, David DeGraffenreid; Joe Gallaher, Roy Eddins, J. T. Burkes, T. H. Vaughn, L. M. Newman, James A. Kirkpatrick, Sam G. Henslee, T. A. Powers, H. T. Davison.

**Gasoline Panel**

Chairman, B. C. Bratton; F. A. Tate, N. E. Honeycutt, Roy Thomas, N. K. Boyett, J. D. Oltorf, Young Priest, W. H. Lewis, R. H. Sapp, Lee Ray McAtee, H. L. Cobb.

**Stove Panel**

Chairman, Young Priest; B. C. Bratton, F. A. Tate.

**Food and Price Panel**

Jack Brothers, food chairman; Carroll Pearce, price chairman; Conally Gwyn, T. R. Depew, R. L. Golding, John T. Canipe, J. B. Oltorf, E. R. Boyles, George Langford, W. E. Shankle.

Miss Bouchillon was the first employee of the Falls County Office of Price Administration and, later, others worked in the various departments (panels). Some worked for longer periods than others and their duties were somewhat varied. For that reason, it is impractical to record here the departments with which they were



more definitely indentified. James Kirkpatrick became chief clerk and other clerks were Miss Lillyan Fore, Mrs. Lovell Ruth Sharp, Mrs. Margaret E. Gardere, Miss Mary Jo Stacey, Mrs. T. B. Bartlett, Sr., Mrs. Ima M. Phipps, Mrs. J. C. Kinard, Mrs. Margalece A. Moore, Mrs. Carolyn T. Schulze and Mrs. Una C. Cobb. (Others may have worked, but their names were not available.)

Originally organized for supervision of conservation and dispensation of essential commodities, the duties of the Boards became more far-reaching when price controls, under OPA directives, went into effect. Citizens, particularly housewives, will long remember the "day of rationing" — when their purchases were curtailed, prices fixed by government decree and, to make purchases, it was necessary to carry ration books and "tokens" and pay for commodities in money, coupons and "tokens." Tokens were needed to make change in "ration coupons" to assure full benefit from coupons allotted to them.

**FARM COMMODITIES RATIONED.** Rationing of farm machinery, lumber for farmers and gasoline for farm trucks and tractors was supervised by a committee of the Agricultural Conservation Association (ACA). Members of the county committee were W. E. Shankle, George Adkins and Frank Lemley. Sidney W. Collins, Administrative officer for the Falls County ACA, said clerks of his office performed paper-work for the committee.

**PEOPLE BUY WAR BONDS.** Falls County people bought their first "U. S. Defense Bonds" in May, 1941. After the United States entered the war, they began buying "U. S. War Bonds." Seven sales campaigns were conducted, headed by a county chairman and chairman and committees for the various communities. In the "Defense Bonds" campaign of 1941, Dr. T. G. Glass was county chairman. In subsequent campaigns, C. A. McCoy, Marlin banker, was county chairman. Mr. McCoy reported people bought liberally, but he did not know how many dollars were invested, because many bought bonds "between campaigns" and in salary and

wage allotments (in which wage and salary earners set aside parts of their wages and salaries weekly, or at other periods, for bond purchases).

Bonds were offered in denominations (maturity value) of \$25.00 to \$1,000 in "Series E" (or D) Bonds, with purchases per person limited to \$5,000 a year. People desiring to invest more bought Series F and G bonds. Promotion of sales was for two purposes, namely to encourage every citizen to invest in the war effort (the war being everyone's war), and to encourage building up individual surpluses to help forestall inflation and resulting discomforts.

**PRACTICES FOR EMERGENCIES.** County defense organizations held a series of assemblies for instruction and practice tests to be ready in event of attacks, or uprisings. Lectures on bombs, bomb types, how to deal with them, to render first aid and control fires and panics were held. The Aircraft Warning Service and Aircraft Wardens held "on Duty" tests, trial "black-outs" and surveyed areas for bomb shelters, or places of greatest safety. They arranged for their use, if needed. They disseminated defense information, obtained from Army and other officials, who had studied conditions in raided war zones, particularly the British Isles, where effective defense measures had been worked out.

To conserve tires and motor vehicles, speed limits were reduced to thirty-five miles per hour.

**FALLS COUNTY MEN PRISONERS OF WAR.** Progress of the war cannot be reviewed in this brief history, but mention of the gallant fight of General MacArthur's men on Bataan and Corregidor, Philippine Islands, is mentioned because Falls County men were there. The small American Army in the Philippines could not cope with superior numbers of and better equipped Japanese invaders, bent on annihilating it and taking over the Islands. MacArthur chose to make a last stand on Bataan Peninsula, where a fierce battle took place, the invaders suffering terrific losses. On April 9, 1942, the "defenders of Bataan were overwhelmed; Corregidor holds," news-

paper and radio accounts reported. Corregidor was a small island off the coast of Bataan and the last stand of that fort, too, was heroic, but not long afterwards, it fell to superior numbers and lack of fighting equipment.

Among the prisoners were four Falls County men: Sergeant Louis B. Celusiak, son of Mr. and Mrs. F. J. Celusiak; Lieutenant Clifton H. Chamberlain, who was later a captain, son of Dr. and Mrs. C. H. Chamberlain of Marlin; Richard F. Flowers, son of Mr. and Mrs. Ed Flowers; and Cecil B. Hay, son of Mr. and Mrs. J. H. Hay, whose sister is Mrs. E. N. (Verba V. Hay) Sikes of Marlin.

Sergeant Celusiak was wounded on Bataan and remained in a Japanese prison camp forty months. Lieutenant Chamberlain remained a prisoner almost thirty-four months, was released January 30, 1945, arrived home in Marlin, March 16, 1945, where a large crowd gathered to welcome him, as he headed a parade. Mr. Flowers (his rank was not known) was captured at the fall of Corregidor, eventually making the supreme sacrifice by dying in the Japanese prison camp. He was buried in the Philippines by his comrades. Sergeant Hay was captured at Bataan, remained in prison two years and nine months, and was released January 6, 1945. When he arrived in Marlin, where he attended school, he, too, was met by a large crowd, which welcomed him, as he led a parade.

**PEOPLE WATCH MILITARY REVERSES.** Unprepared for war against prepared enemies, other reverses piled up in the early stages of the conflict. British possessions in the war zones of the Pacific were at the mercy of, or under control of, Japanese forces and could give little help in the fight against Japan.

General MacArthur had been ordered to leave Bataan a few days before it fell and General Jonathan Wainwright had been left in command, destined to surrender and become a prisoner of the Japanese. After leaving Bataan, MacArthur began assembling an American Army to make good his promise, "I'll be back!" (to the



Philippines). The American Navy proved its ability to cope with the Japanese Navy and transport men and supplies to Australia, where the new army was assembled. This nation was particularly interested in settling scores with the "Sons of the Sun" (Japanese), who had treacherously attacked Pearl Harbor, while their special peace envoy, holding "an imperially approved formula for peaceful settlement of Japanese-American differences," was in Washington, professing peaceful intentions. Americans followed events of the war in the Pacific with eagerness and early news was not encouraging. Reverses piled up.

Meanwhile, American people worked in a single effort to provide means of war, including food produced on their farms. The Army and Navy busied themselves training their young "unprofessional" warriors. Streams of men went to training camps and, by late 1942, young men, eighteen years of age, were entering the Service, the Selective Service Act having been changed to include them in the draft.

Vexations on the home-front multiplied, due, in a great measure, to the loss of so many men, including the eighteen years of age, whose parents felt they should be allowed to complete their educations. People also were annoyed over unwelcomed restrictions and OPA regulations, many of which they did not understand, although the majority agreed OPA was essential and helpful in the fair distribution of scarce commodities and in controlling prices, despite its weaknesses.

**IN FALLS COUNTY.** Since Falls County produced diversified farming crops, its people accelerated production of food and feed, both for the home-front and the Armed Forces. "Victory Gardens" were promoted and more gardens were planted and harvested. The American Red Cross, under leadership of loyal women, promoted campaigns for Red Cross funds and, throughout the war, made surgical dressings, and knitted garments for the Armed Forces. Many citizens donated blood, to be shipped overseas to save lives of wounded men on the battle fronts and in hospitals. Tons of scrap iron,

aluminum and other metals, rubber, paper and rags were gathered and shipped to American industries. Fats and greases, too, were collected. (Fats and greases were needed for manufacture of explosives: also, of soap.)

Early in January, 1942, County Clerk Sanford Hancock was appointed licensing agent for explosives, this, too, being a precautionary measure, to record for what purposes explosives were used, to whom issued, etc. In 1940 aliens had been registered and finger-printed, but early in 1942, those who had not complied with the order, were required to do so during February 9 to 28th. Aliens also were required to turn their radios over to proper authorities. These seemed unnecessary in Falls County, where its few aliens had been loyal citizens for years and had simply failed to complete naturalization details.

**MAIL TO OVERSEAS PERSONNEL RESTRICTED.** In February, 1942, about 9,000,000 men, ages 20 to 44, registered under the Selective Service Act, and in March another draft lottery was held in Washington to determine their order of liability for service.

By June, 1942, thousands of soldiers, sailors, marines, women of the Armed Forces and nurses were overseas and, to facilitate mail service, V-Mail was inaugurated. For V-Mail, special stationery was provided (first by postal authorities, later by industry) upon which letters were written. Each sheet of stationery was then folded in such a manner as to form an envelope. The letters were transported to centers where they were opened and photographed, consecutively, on to a small film (said to be about the size of a postage-stamp) — hundreds of letters on a single roll of film. The films were rolled into small coils and carried by air overseas, where the letters were reproduced by an enlarger and the legible enlargements delivered to Armed Forces personnel. The service was in use both ways, to and from overseas destinations.

The large number of men and women overseas, also, necessitated limitations of shipments to them, since maximum ship space was needed to transport men and sup-

plies. Only one package per person per week was accepted for mailing—and then only when the overseas addressees had requested the articles in writing. The size of the package was limited to five pounds in weight, eighteen inches in length and forty-two inches in length and girth, combined. Of course, the restrictions were changed, when more shipping space became available.

**JAPANESE SUBMARINE SHOWN IN COUNTY.** For promotion of sales of Defense Bonds, in February, 1943, a Japanese "two-men" submarine was shown in Marlin. The small under-craft was captured during the fateful attack on Pearl Harbor, December 7, 1941. It was the type, popularly known as the "suicide submarine," because its two inmates (operators) were considered "dead" by the Japanese commander, when they entered it for the attack. It was not intended that they should survive, but that their lives and craft be "traded" for a larger target. The Japanese, it will be borne in mind, encouraged suicidal martyrdom, their religion teaching them they would be rewarded after death for it. The submarine was brought to Marlin on wheels and, equipped with two life-like dummies, representing Japanese sailors, attracted huge crowds. Dr. T. G. Glass was county chairman for the bond campaign in which the submarine was exhibited.

**FALLS COUNTY YOUNG MAN LOSES LIFE.** As in World War I, it is impossible to know who was the first Falls County young man to lose his life in defense of his country. About the middle of January, 1943, sadness fell over the county when Mr. and Mrs. J. C. Byrd of Mooreville received a message that their son, Lieutenant Joe Curtis Byrd, died in action in line of duty, November 8, 1942, on the North African front. Lieutenant Byrd was buried in Oran, Algeria, November 11, 1942. Memorial services were held in his home-town at the Mooreville Methodist Church, January 17, 1943. In May of the same year, at commencement exercises of the Chilton High School, where he graduated, Lieutenant Byrd, posthumously, was awarded a medal for "heroic



and meritorious service," given by Major General James H. Doolittle and presented by an officer of Waco Army Air Field, where he trained.

In months following, people were saddened over news of other young Falls County men giving their lives for their country. It is regretted all names were not available for recording in this history.

**FALLS COUNTY WOMEN IN THE WAR.** In previous wars, Falls County women took an active part in the war as nurses, both in hospitals and on the battle-fronts. In World War II, a number of young women were definite parts of the Armed Forces, not only as nurses, but in other important fields.

As is it impractical to record the names of all men who were in the Service, so it is also impractical, if not impossible, to record the names of Falls County women who were in the nursing corps, the Army and Navy. Women served, in addition to nurses corps, in the Women's Army Corps (WAC), which started out as the Woman's Auxiliary Army Corps, but was changed to Women's Army Corps; they served in the Women's Reserve, U. S. Naval Service, popularly known as the WAVES (abbreviation for Women Accepted for Voluntary Emergency Service); and they served in the Women's Reserve of the U. S. Coast Guard.

The following women, among others whose names were not (in 1946) available to the editor —

Served as nurses:

Bettye J. Aderhold of Chilton, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. E. B. Aderhold  
Lt. Eva L. Becker, graduate of Rosebud High School, daughter of  
Mr. and Mrs. A. C. Becker  
Captain Anna K. Curry, daughter of Mrs. Hattie E. Curry of Marlin  
Ensign Eava Katherine Eakin of Chilton, daughter of Mr. and Mrs.  
S. I. Eakin of Chilton  
First Lieut. Wanona Howard of Rosebud, daughter of Mr. and Mrs.  
H. C. Howard  
First Lieut. Mary K. Kaiser, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Gehard Kaiser  
of Marlin  
Pvt. Margaret L. Sudduth, daughter of Mr and Mrs. C. J. Sudduth  
of Lott

Served in the WAC:

Juanita Criswell, daughter of Mrs. Maria Wiggins of Marlin  
Virginia Edward of Lott, daughter of Mrs. Laura Douglas and wife  
of A. G. Edwards

Pfc. Joe Geryk, graduate of Rosebud High School, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Rudolf Geryk

Sgt. Minnie L. Kaiser, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Gehard Kaiser of Marlin

Martha Loughridge, teacher in the Marlin schools.

Cpl. Stelle L. Patke, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Henry S. Patke of Marlin

Pfc. Mary Walraven, formerly Mary Elizabeth Robertson, daughter of Mrs. H. H. Robertson of Marlin, wife of A. T. Walraven

Juanita Welch, teacher in the Marlin Schools

Served in the WAVES:

Ensign Doris L. Ernst of Barclay, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. H. W. Ernst of Barclay

SP 3. c Billie Joe Hammer of Marlin, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. W. E. Hammer of Marlin

Yeoman 2/c Barbara J. Phipps of Marlin, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Joel Phipps of Marlin

SK 2/c Willie Mae Pomykal, graduate of Marlin High School, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. J. J. Pomykal of Marlin.

Lieut. (J.G.) May Ethel Watkins, daughter of Mrs. Joe M. Watkins and the late Joe M. Watkins, Marlin

Y 2c Dorothy Lil Cobb, USNR, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. H. L. Cobb of Marlin

Of course, the women of Falls County served on the home-front, in behalf of the Red Cross, for which they made surgical dressings, and knitted garments; they helped promote sales of War Stamps and Bonds; they collected fats and greases, paper and rags and took over essential work, when their sons, husbands, and brothers were called into service.

**BATTLES AND RESULTS.** The British Isles did not fall to Hitler's forces, as Hitler had boasted — when he provoked the defenders with "Keep your shirts on. I'm coming." Prime Minister Churchill, by the end of 1942, expressed confidence Great Britain had "weathered the storm and was ready to carry the fight to Hitler's own doors." America, too, had done the "impossible" by building great numbers of ships, airplanes, tanks, guns, ammunition and other war equipment. Thousands of its young men were overseas, poised for attack.

In January, 1943, President Roosevelt, Prime Minister Churchill, Premier Stalin of Russia and other representatives of Allied nations held the celebrated Casablanca Conference, at which "unconditional surrender" was pronounced for the dictators. In following months, a raging war in North Africa ended in annihilation and surrender by early fall (1943) of remnants of the German and

Italian armies on that Continent. By September, 1943, the Allies were driving northward toward Rome, from the "toe" of Italy. After frantic efforts to stop the allies on the southern tip of Italy and at Anzio, thirty-five miles from Rome, where the Allies had landed, Italy surrendered "unconditionally," September 8, 1943.

At Teheran, President Roosevelt, Prime Minister Churchill and Premier Stalin met about December 1, of the same year, and further designs were laid against Hitler's Nazis. On June 5, 1944, known as "D-Day," Allied troops, including Americans, landed on the Continent of Europe in Normandy, Northwestern France, where severe and tragic battles took place, including the famous "Battle of the Bulge" in December of 1944 and early 1945. Not long afterwards, Germany surrendered "unconditionally," May 7, 1945.

**ACTION IN THE PACIFIC AREA.** Progress in the Pacific was slow, too, because this nation was unprepared for war. About the time Allied forces were charging toward Berlin, Germany, General MacArthur, in command of American forces in the Pacific, and Admiral Nimitz and the Navy, were making progress fulfilling the promise MacArthur made when he left the Philippines in the summer of 1942, when he said, "I'll be back!" The epic struggle of American Marines, sailors and soldiers over handicaps in the scattered islands of the Pacific, cannot be recorded here. Early in January, 1945, MacArthur and his men had landed on Luzon, and in weeks following, were hammering at the last defenses of Manila, Japan was feeling the full weight of America's power and avenging wrath.

On August 5, 1945, the world was amazed at the destructive power of the first atomic bomb to be used as a weapon of war. The bomb, developed by American scientists, was dropped from U. S. airplanes on the Japanese munitions city of Hiroshima, with a population of 343,000. The blast struck with an estimated force of 20,000 tons of TNT, obliterating sixty per cent of the entire city, including five major industrial plants, leaving standing only 2.8 square miles of the city's 6.9



square miles of building and other structures. Practically every living thing was destroyed beyond recognition.

Four days later, President Truman warned the Japanese they would be obliterated if they did not surrender immediately. The people had little to say, of course, since Japan was in the grip of the militaristic caste. On the next day, August 10th, a second atomic bomb was dropped on Nagasaki with a population of 253,000, and one-third of it was destroyed.

Tensely, America awaited surrender offers from the Japanese government. It came August 14, 1945 — "unconditional" — although actual signing did not take place until September 2, 1945.

With the surrender of Japan, the greatest war in history ended, except for "cleaning up" and the hereafter! Time alone would tell how disastrous it was and how long its effects would linger.

**COUNTY CELEBRATES MILDLY.** People of Falls County were jubilant, but calm, when enemy countries surrendered, one by one. Perhaps, they were more jubilant when Hitler's forces collapsed, because the Germans were better equipped and, in many ways, held a key position in the war. They realized that when Germany surrendered the full force of Allied power, thrown against Japan, would quickly end fighting on that area. At both the surrender of Italy, September 8, 1943, and of Germany, May 7, 1945, impromptu parades were held in the county and people attended church services to render Thanks and pay their respects to the Armed Forces.

As expected, Japan's single-handed war against Allied powers did not last long. Even, if atomic bombs had not fallen on Hiroshima and Nagasaki, it is doubtful Japan could have held out much longer. There were other parades, blowing of automobile horns and noises when Japan accepted "unconditional surrender," August 14, 1945, and, later, when the "Tiger of Malaya," Japanese General Yamashita, officially surrendered to

General Jonathan Wainwright, September 2, 1945. Falls County celebrated the victories jubilantly, yet calmly and reverently, and not with clamorous demonstrations.

Immediately, after formal surrender of Japan, President Truman in his V-J (Victory over Japan) Day broadcast to the Armed Forces, told them they would be returned to civilian life as speedily as possible, considering needs for men in the occupation of troubled areas and preparedness, until peace was made secure.

**FROM AND TO THE ARMED FORCES.** Personnel of the Armed Forces were released under the "point system," based upon the length of their service, overseas and battle service and other "points." While many returned to civilian life, others entered the Service, Selective Service continuing its call for men.

**EFFORTS FOR PEACE.** Details of the United Nations Organization (UNO) and efforts for peace cannot be reviewed in this volume; nor details of reconversion, readjustment, housing problems and other vexations left in the wake of the greatest war in history. "The war may be over, but is there assurance of peace?" was the question people were asking in 1946. Political elections indicated national restlessness, confusion and a swing to conservatism. President Truman continued efforts of his predecessor to promote a better relations between nations, hoping to forestall another war.

In the midst of various enigmas, the President announced official end of World War II, effective at noon, December 31, 1946.

**RETURN OF PERSONNEL OF THE ARMED FORCES.** Former jobs and positions, held by the men and women before they were called for service, were open to them upon their return according to government decree and public approval. Many returned to their jobs in Falls County. Others returned to farming, but found changes had taken, and were taking, place. Mechanical farming and loss of labor on the farms were responsible for those changes. In a review of his work as County Agricultural

Agent, W. I. Ross said early in 1947, "Cotton is still a major crop, but cattle and poultry raising and dairying are receiving new impetus. There are more farm-owners in the county and farmers are practicing diversification."

Many veterans married while in the Service, or soon after their return to civilian life. Shortages of homes and building materials, perhaps, delayed other marriages. A number were married to young women in foreign countries and, by the end of 1946, several foreign-born brides, some with children, arrived in the county — to cast their lots with their husbands and Falls County people. In July, 1946, a number, representing several foreign countries, were presented at the Old Settlers and Veterans Association Reunion and the attractive young women, their use of English limited, expressed appreciation for America and the "kindnesses of people, so gracious to help us understand and speak the language and become familiar with new customs and freedoms." Naturally, since many Falls County men continued to serve in foreign lands, other foreign-born brides (and their children) were expected to arrive.

**VETERANS ORGANIZATIONS ACTIVE.** Not long after veterans arrived, they began identifying themselves with veterans organizations, as well as becoming active in civic, social and commercial associations. Many joined posts of the American Legion and other organized posts of the Veterans of Foreign Wars (VFW).

In Marlin, veterans proposed organization of a post of the VFW, members of which would live in all parts of the county. Veterans of the several communities, however, preferred to have posts nearer to them, some organized, and the post in Marlin consists of members living in Marlin and communities nearby. Active in organization of the post were Oscar Lee Torbett, Ed Stuart, Floyd Kowalski, Roy Lee Anderson, Bill Woodward, F. T. Parks, Herman Rogas, Homer Walters, Billy Steele, A. W. Hoehne, Ike Handelman, Ike Mann and others, perhaps, whose names were not available.



The post was named in honor of the first three young men of the vicinity to lose their lives in defense of their country, Walter E. Gilmore, James M. Williams, and Kat Katool — "Gilmore-Williams-Katool Post Number 4693, Veterans of Foreign Wars."

Not long after the VFW was organized, wives, mothers and sisters of the men instituted an Auxiliary to the Post, known as Gilmore-Williams Katool Auxiliary to Veterans of Foreign Wars Post Number 4693. Not less than twenty members were required and the Auxiliary was instituted April 16, 1946, with the following charter members, the President said: Mrs. Wilford B. (Irene) Brown, President; Mrs. Wyche (Ellamay) Springfield, Secretary; Mrs. Steele (Clyda Bell) Alexander, Mrs. Walter B. (Virginia D.) Allen, Mrs. Garland (Nell Lois) Barton, Mrs. Edna Mae Baushausen, Mrs. Guy (Hattie Alma) Garrett, Sr., Mrs. Guy (Velma B.) Garrett, Jr., Mrs. Arnold (Judy) Hoehne, Mrs. T. J. (Hazel) Honeycutt, Jr., Mrs. Ike (Lydia) Mann, Mrs. Lloyd (Aline) Pauling, Mrs. James (Blanche) Peacock, Mrs. J. C. (Nida) Peevey, Mrs. Grady (Pauline) Reed, Mrs. Jack (Mary Elizabeth) Riddle, Mrs. Herman (Ethel Mae) Rogas, Mrs. Ben (Lola Mary) Sauter, Mrs. Vernon F. (Mary Alice) Stone, Mrs. Ed (Alice) Stuart, Mrs. Elmo (Pauline) Tobias, Mrs. Oscar Lee (Virginia Ruth) Torbett, Mrs. J. M. (Lela) Vandrias, Mrs. Cecil (Doris) Vann, Mrs. Eddie (Mary M.) Vann, Mrs. B. M. (Mabel) Watts, Mrs. M. F. (Beulah M.) Williams, and Mrs. Curtis (Lunell S.) Williams.

**THE "FIGHT" FOR PEACE CONTINUES.** The number of Falls County men and women who served in World War II was not known in 1946. Men and women continued to "fight" for peace. They were going to foreign lands and, although certain enemies had capitulated, evidences of peace were lacking.

Several months after the end of World War I, the "Second Report of the U. S. Provost Marshall General

to the Secretary of War, on Operations of the Selective Service System, to December 20, 1918" revealed that 8,123 Falls County men had registered for service in that war. Many were exempt under provisions of the Draft Law and only estimates were available and they ranged from 1,500 to 2,200 men.

At the end of 1946, the number of men, who registered in the five registrations for World War II, continued an official secret, members of the Selective Service Boards said. Official reports from Washington had not been released, because men were still going to training camps and foreign lands. Certainly, it is conceded the number, who served up to cessation of hostilities, was many times larger than that for those who served in the war of 1917-1918. Furthermore, every citizen of the United States served in World War II, for it was so far-reaching, so vital to every citizen and required such complete co-operation and effort, every citizen was in the Service, though some were in it indirectly.

**CONCLUSION.** History continues. Other chapters will be added to the history of Falls County.

History is not created by a few people. Leaders are necessary, but the real builders of civilization — of good families and homes, good places in which to live, good society, communities, counties and nations — are citizens, not always mentioned in history, but those who quietly go about their daily lives, living and building uprightly, sensing and obeying their inborn impulses for good and building good homes and families.

Pioneers laid a firm foundation in Falls County. Their descendants, and those who cast lots with them, have the backgrounds of holiness of purpose and courage that assure Falls County of continued progress.

## CHAPTER XIV

### Falls County's District Court

**COURT HELD IN ESTEEM.** The Court of Falls County is held in high esteem, not only because of its distinguished service and personnel, but because its labors reflect a law-abiding and intelligent citizenship. Its work was chiefly routine, with only occasional interruptions for attention to the more serious and violent crimes. Civil matters, too, were routine, offering evidence of an intelligent and cooperative citizenship, capable of conducting its businesses and professions with a minimum of misunderstandings.

The Court "wandered around in several judicial districts," including the Third, Thirteenth, Twenty-Third, Nineteenth, Fifty-Fourth and Eighty-Second, in which it is now (1947).

Among the civil suits, perhaps, the most outstanding ones grew out of the conflicting land grants of T. J. Chambers and De la Serda, both of whom obtained grants under early Texas governments (Mexico), their grants overlapping. Titles to farms in a vast section of the County were clouded for a long time, but before 1900 litigation was completed and the titles made clear. Other civil cases of note came out of problems of whether, or not, citizens of a foreign country may inherit property in the United States. Ed Hanrick, who possessed considerable land in the northwestern part of the county, near Satin and the Brazos river, died, leaving his property to a relative, who lived in the United States. Other relatives, citizens of a foreign country, sought to establish claims on the property and litigation continued for several decades, but was eventually finished, making titles of former Hanrick land clear.



Among the distinguished jurists and officers of the Court were Judge R. E. B. Baylor, one of the founders of Baylor University (named in his honor); A. G. Perry, member of the Council of the Provisional Government of Texas in 1835 (Perry, Falls County, Texas, was named in his honor); and others, shown in the table elsewhere in this volume. United States Senator Tom Connally, chairman of the Senate Foreign Relations Committee during World War II and for months after it ended, began his career practicing in the Court of Falls County, where he served as district attorney.

# OFFICERS OF FALLS COUNTY DISTRICT COURT

List prepared by J. A. Phipps, Jr., while District Clerk

| DATE                   | DISTRICT JUDGE    | District Attorney   | DISTRICT CLERK                                   | SHERIFF                          |
|------------------------|-------------------|---|--|----------------------------------|
| 1/1/51 to<br>1/1/1853  | R. E. B. Baylor   | Josiah F. Crosby<br>Fred A. Will<br>Asa H. Will               | Thos. A. Jarvis<br>Wm. Killebrew<br>Sam A. Blain | John W. Jarvis                   |
| 1/1/53 to<br>1/1/1857  | Henry J. Jewett   | Robert S. Gould   | Sam A. Blain<br>Geo. F. Daffin<br>Sam Barnes     | John W. Jarvis<br>John Barton    |
| 1/1/57 to<br>1/1/1861  | John Gregg        | Robert S. Gould<br>Charles Stewart                            | Sam Barnes<br>Saml. A. Blain<br>Sam Barnes       | John Barton<br>Buck Killebrew    |
| 1/1/61 to<br>1/1/1862  | Robt. S. Gould    | Charles Stewart   | Sam Barnes                                       | Buck Killebrew                   |
| 1/1/62 to<br>1/1/1865  | James C. Walker   | Charles Stewart<br>W. K. James                                | Sam Barnes<br>D. G. Adams                        | John Barton<br>John J. Coleman   |
| 1/1/65 to<br>1/1/1866  | G. A. Everett     | W. K. James   | Saml. L. Dalton                                  | Wm. M. Reed                      |
| 1/1/66 to<br>1/1/1867  | A. G. Perry       | W. K. James<br>T. D. Williams                                 | Sam. L. Dalton                                   | Wm. M. Reed<br>John W. Norwood   |
| 1/1/67 to<br>1/1/1868  | Thos. Harrison    | C. B. Pearre  | J. M. Watkins                                    | L. B. Barton                     |
| 1/1/68 to<br>1/1/1870  | A. J. Evans       | J. J. Vardemann<br>C. B. Pearre<br>Geo. Clark<br>J. D. Oltorf | Saml. L. Dalton                                  | R. A. Oakes<br>W. K. Dickinson   |
| 1/1/70 to<br>1/1/1873  | J. W. Oliver      | J. L. L. McCall<br>C. M. Pearre                               | M. H. Curry<br>Jas. M. Hart                      | B. F. Scogins                    |
| 1/1/73 to<br>11/1/1874 | J. H. Banton      | Jno. W. McDonald<br>C. B. Pearre                              | Jas. M. Hart                                     | B. F. Scogins<br>W. G. Etheridge |
| 11/1/74 to<br>9/1/1876 | D. M. Prendergast | C. B. Pearre  | Jas. M. Hart                                     | W. G. Etheridge                  |

|                             |                   |  |  |   |
|-----------------------------|-------------------|--|--|---|
| 9/1/76 to<br>9/1/1877       | X. B. Sanders     | B. W. Rimes  | Jesse Scruggs  | W. S. Conoly  |
| 9/1/77 to<br>1/1/1881       | Lin C. Alexander  | B. W. Rimes<br>B. H. Rice  | Jesse Scruggs  | W. S. Conoly<br>J. Watson   |
| 1/1/81 to<br>1/1/1886       | B. W. Rimes       | B. H. Rice   | Jesse Scruggs<br>John Reynolds<br>Chas. H. Bartlett                              | Cyrus Whitaker<br>John Ward<br>Cyrus Whitaker                               |
| 1/1/86 to<br>1/1/1889       | Eugene Williams   | B. H. Rice   | Chas. H. Bartlett  | Cyrus Whitaker  |
| 1/1/89 to<br>7/1/1890       | J. R. Dickinson   | Z. I. Harlan   | Nick Stewart   | John Ward   |
| 7/1/90 to<br>7/1/1893       | L. W. Goodrich    | Z. I. Harlan<br>J. J. Swann  | Nick Stewart<br>W. E. Hunnicutt  | John Ward   |
| 7/1/93 to<br>1/1/1908       | S. R. Scott       | F. M. Boyles<br>G. C. Cabell<br>F. M. Boyles<br>Geo. H. Carter<br>Tom Connally | W. E. Hunnicutt<br>C. D. Newbold<br>W. A. Powell<br>Ben Taylor<br>M. V. Bradshaw | John Ward<br>D. R. Emerson<br>C. P. Carlton<br>Jno. C. Greer<br>M. J. Poole |
| 1/1/08 to<br>11/1/1917      | Richard I. Monroe | Tom Connally<br>Frank Oltorf<br>Tom B. Bartlett                                | M. V. Bradshaw<br>H. L. Cobb<br>Jas. D. Barton                                   | M. J. Poole<br>C. H. Plott  |
| 11/1/17 to<br>1/1/1919      | W. A. Patrick     | Tom B. Bartlett, Sr.   | Jas. D. Barton   | C. H. Plott   |
| 1/1/19 to<br>11/1/1926      | Prentice Oltorf   | H. O. Jennings<br>C. R. Glass  | J. H. Powell<br>Jas. D. Barton<br>P. H. Van Pelt                                 | C. O. Moore<br>H. T. Barton   |
| 11/1/26 to<br>1/1/1935      | E. M. Dodson      | C. R. Glass<br>Terry Dickens<br>C. M. Pearce                                   | P. H. Van Pelt<br>Janie Belle Ray  | H. T. Barton<br>M. M. Reese   |
| 1/1/35 to<br>1/1/1936       | Terry Dickens     | John C. Patterson<br>Charles E. Reagan<br>T. B. Bartlett, Sr.                  | Janie Belle Ray<br>J. A. Phipps, Jr.   | L. O. Hay   |
| 1/1/47 to<br>present (1947) | John C. Patterson | Sam D. Dollahite   | Garland Barton   | Brady Pamplin   |



## CHAPTER XV

### Narrative of Falls County Courthouses

Falls County was created in 1850, but the first minutes, as far as known, of the Commissioners Court records, were dated February 24, 1851. Names of the "Chief Justice," commissioners, Justice of the Peace and County Clerk were indicated, but, after jurors were drawn for "district court to be held on the Third Monday in March," an election was ordered "in the several precincts to elect officers for vacancies in the county." The minutes do not show where the court was held, nor the kind of house in which it was held.

The State Legislature, at first, had designated Viesca as the county seat, and perhaps, the Court met there, although there is no proof. After one or two more meetings, on March 22, 1851, the records show, "be it further ordered that the town of Marlin be the place of holding court in and of the county of Falls until otherwise directed by law; also other courts shall be held at the town of Marlin."

Where was the first court house — the place where the first commissioners met? Was it at Viesca, or the place which later was designated as "Marlin"? This may never be answered with authority, because records are meager.

**FIRST COURT HOUSE, 1850-1855.** The late J. R. Kirkpatrick, one of the founders of early Mooreville community who arrived in Falls County in 1853, left a picture of a log house, upon which he had printed, "Falls County's first court house. Built in 1851." The photograph was in possession of Mrs. Jim Bow of Littlefield, Texas, a niece of Mr. Kirkpatrick, and according to the best information, it WAS Falls County's first court house, although it is not known whether it was



#### FOUR OF FALLS COUNTY'S FIVE COURT HOUSES

**Upper right:** Court House built of logs. According to reliable information, it was the county's first. Its location has been questioned, because old Viesca at the falls was designated county seat and the Commissioners Court may have met there first; or the house may have been located on the present Court House Square, after the county was organized. (Picture courtesy Mayor E. M. Dodson of Marlin.)

**Upper left:** Court house built in 1876, replaced ten or eleven years later, following a storm, because it was considered unsafe. It replaced the county's second court house, built about 1856 of cedar, which burned about 1870. (Picture Courtesy of Mrs. Jim Bow.)

**Center:** Court house of 1887. After fifty-two years, this structure, too, was replaced, because it was considered unsafe. (Marlin Chamber of Commerce picture.)

**Lower:** Court house of 1939 — now standing (1947).

**CORRECTION** - Picture of first courthouse - top, right - is by courtesy of Mrs. Jim Bow, niece of J. R. Kirkpatrick. Picture of courthouse of 1876-top left - is by courtesy of Mayor E. M. Dodson of Marlin.

located at Viesca, or on the spot which later became the "Court House Square." The venerable Mr. Kirkpatrick failed to make note of where the first court house stood.

**COURT HOUSE OF 1855-1876.** The chief justice and commissioners were soon aware that the one-room house was inadequate for housing the county's growing business, and on November, 1853, "the Court proceeded to let out the building of a court house in the town of Marlin; that on the first day of February, 1854, there will be a letting of a contract to build a courthouse in the town of Marlin; the dimensions of said court house is to be as follows: forty feet square, two stories high, four rooms below; two galleries passing through east, west, north and south, eight feet wide, each of them; the low floor is to be of brick; the house is to be made of plain plank and covered with good heart lumber or cedar; the upper story is laid out in three rooms, one for a court room, the others for jury rooms. The lower story is divided into four rooms of equal dimensions. There are to be four chimneys to the house, each having two fireplaces insuring a fire-place in each room and two fire-places in the court room."

On June 3, 1854, the court appropriated \$5,000.00 for the building and recorded other specifications, including "square roof to be of zinc or as the Court may direct hereafter." George E. Green, J. H. McKissick, D. W. Field, David Barclay, and Henry McKinzie were appointed trustees "to superintend said building, three of them to constitute a quorum ----," and were authorized "to let out and contract for completion of said house --- which was to be provided with "good seats and judge-stands, tables and so forth, as said trustees may think proper with all the necessary conveniences for a courthouse."

Later in 1854, contract for building the courthouse went to Cremer and Arnold. However, changes in the original plans were made, so that the total cost ran more than \$5,000.00. The State Legislature, the min-



utes show, released nine-tenths of the State's tax for 1854, for use in building the edifice.

The building, according to records and other information, was made of cedar. It is understood that Churchill Jones, a wealthy farmer and slave owner, who had arrived in Falls County only a short time previously, and acquired several thousands of acres of land near the Falls, assisted the county, financially. The county may have had to wait longer for a court house, if Mr. Jones had not loaned the money, is a wide understanding.

The late Nelson Denson, former slave, recalled that the contractors, Cremer and Arnold, established a saw mill south of Marlin, near Big Creek and Hog Island, and that "every log and plank that went into the building was cut from Falls County in that vicinity." Denson said he witnessed work on the building.

The minutes of the Court show that the courthouse was completed about the middle of 1855 and, "appearing to the satisfaction of the court, that in order to beautify and protect the court house, erected by Messrs. Cremer and Arnold, the said building should be white-washed and painted." Money was appropriated for that purpose. Also, the court ordered that a fence be built around the house, "80 yards square, of cedar posts six feet six inches long, hewed square, placed eighteen inches in the ground. Holes three inches square in them, through which were passed three-inch square bars." Also, a well was ordered dug on the Square to supply employees and visitors with water. The old house was ordered sold to the highest bidder.

**CEDAR COURT HOUSE BURNS.** The white cedar court house, equipped with "modern conveniences" of that day, and in which the County was doing business after July, 1855, was destined to "go up in smoke." It served until after the War Between the States and the first years of Reconstruction. To it came the unpopular District Judge, J. W. Oliver, with his unpleasantries and radical ideas under the E. J. Davis Regime.

Minutes of the Commissioners Court in the first book (Book A) end with the date, January 4, 1858. Minutes

next recorded (Book 1) are for November 24, 1872. Sometime between these dates the court house burned and with it, presumably, some of the minutes. On January 4, 1858, it is shown that F. W. Capps was Chief Justice and S. S. Ward, E. H. Hatch, J. P. Moffitt, and William M. Newton were members of the Court; Sam D. Barclay was county clerk; John Barton was sheriff. The next book (Book 1) begins November 24, 1872, and shows George J. Elam was Chief Justice and C. T. Barclay, J. W. Etheridge, Ed McCullough and Edmund Pierson were commissioners; Sam D. Barclay was county clerk; and W. G. Etheridge was sheriff.

The exact date the cedar court house burned was not definitely fixed, but, evidently, it was not long before November 24, 1872, for it is presumed the Court met elsewhere "according to law."

Ed McCullough of Mooreville and Marlin said in 1946 that as a boy he had heard his father, Commissioner McCullough, tell of fears at one time for the safety of the court house and its records. Commissioner McCullough said rumors that the house would be burned aroused the Court to removing the important records to a vault, or small "more secure" building elsewhere on the court house square. Not long afterwards, the cedar court house went up in a blaze.

What was the cause of the fire? Some suggested it was of incendiary origin, resulting from the unrest of Reconstruction and the E. J. Davis Regime. Embro Norwood, ninety-and-more year old Negro ex-slave, said (1946) he was in Marlin, when the structure burned, and it "is generally understood that a man burned it down for \$15.00. That's a mighty little to get for that kind of job," he said jocosely. Of course, a cedar court house is far from fireproof and the blaze might have been accidental. On the other hand, it is generally believed there were many records some would have been "glad to see go up in smoke," following political practices of early Reconstruction.

The people of Falls County, including county officials, experienced many inconveniences and re-adjustments as

a result of the loss of the valuable records. It was decades before effects of the fire had passed away.

**TEMPORARY QUARTERS.** The minutes do not show where the business of the county was transacted for about five years. Reference to "orders to pay William Killebrew," certain amounts for "rents for jury room" and so on, indicated the county rented space. One of the first acts of the Commissioners Court, after the fire, was to appoint George J. Elam, William Killebrew and W. L. Patillo, a committee "to prepare a plan, or plans, for the court house, the estimate not to exceed \$15,000---" and to report to the March (1873) term of Court.

**COURT HOUSE UNDER CONSTRUCTION.** It was March 29, 1874, before the report was made and "the plans of William McComb and Jones for the court house to be located on the spot of the old court house were accepted. The presiding Justice was ordered to call for sealed bids." Two years later, May, 1876, the court got around to opening bids and awarded a contract. It went to Thomas R. King. A special committee, George J. Elam, George White, William Killebrew, Zenas Bartlett, and W. A. J. Nicholson, was appointed "to superintend construction of the house and report to the court from time to time."

**COMPLICATIONS ARISE.** Not long after construction began, the contractor, Mr. King, presented to the Court, plans for adding an upper story. Apparently the original plans did not call for two stories. The court, taking the plans into consideration, authorized the added work. Later, a series of complications arose and the minutes show that a "state architect from Austin" was called in for "advisement and recommendations."

Is it well to digress to refer to a new law, which went into effect along with the Texas State Constitution of 1876, which is now (1946) in effect, pertaining to the conduct of the business of counties and methods of electing commissioners. Public notice of the new law appeared in the county newspaper, *The Marlin Ball*,



published by T. C. Oltorf at that time. Under the Constitution, the office of County Judge was created. In compliance with the law, the charter of Falls County was amended, precincts re-described, or re-established, and an election ordered. In April of that year (1876) "E. C. Stuart, duly elected county judge, by taking and subscribing to the oath of office, as prescribed by law under the new constitution, was qualified and installed" by George J. Elam. Whereupon the functions of the old court (Police Court) ended and, to Falls County came one of the new arrangement under the State Constitution of 1876.

**COURT HOUSE OF 1876 COMPLETED.** Commissioners, who took office with Judge Stuart under the new law were H. Rickelmann, George Harlan and Leonard Magee. Other officers were W. S. Conoly, Sheriff, State and County Collector of Taxes; M. H. Curry, County clerk; Jesse Scruggs, District clerk; W. L. Patillo, County Treasurer; A. M. Attaway, F. B. Collins, J. W. Etheridge, J. F. McDonald and D. M. Jackson, Justices of the Peace; J. T. Reed, animal and hide inspector; and Edmund Pierson, county surveyor.

It became the lot of the new Court to unravel difficulties which had arisen in building the court house. Those difficulties were removed and the third court house for Falls county was completed—a square building, with center tower (cupolo) and roof of standing-seam tin, wooden cornice, a vault of brick in the west passage, and wooden floors. The walls were of brick. With an eye both to safety and beauty, lightening rods were installed on the building at costs of 8 cents a foot for rods, 35 cents each for balls, \$5.00 each for braces and \$3.00 each for points.

**DAMAGE FROM STORM.** The records reveal E. C. Stuart was still county judge in 1886 and had been previously. Also, in 1886, these officers served Falls County; Commissioners W. Z. Burke, J. A. Powers, W. A. Wooley and D. M. Currie; Sheriff, Cyrus Whitaker; County Clerk, George S. Slater.

The records of 1886 contain notations of a storm which swept over the county with disastrous effects. Soon thereafter references to damages to the court house appeared and various repairs were ordered and completed. By May, 1886, the records indicate popular notion the court house was unsafe and Judge Stuart was authorized to have an architect inspect it. Thus began a series of measures which resulted in building of Falls County's court house of 1887-1936.

**COURT HOUSE OF 1887-1936.** Judge Stuart had employed an "architect" and mechanics to repair the court house of 1876. Later, on May 10, 1886, he was authorized to hire a competent architect to inspect the building and ascertain whether or not it was safe, or what it needed. Twenty-one days later the report of Dodson and ———, architects, showed the building unsafe and the Court engaged Eugene T. Heiner, an architect, to draft plans for a new edifice. Mr. Heiner's plans were accepted July 24, 1886, and Judge Stuart was authorized to advertise in the Galveston News for bids.



JUDGE E. C. STUART

On August 19, 1886, bids of seven contractors were opened and the lowest, \$47,793.00 by A. Baumbach of Houston, Texas, was accepted. (The highest bid was \$53,600.) Mr. Baumbach qualified as contractor by making bond and work started.

Contract for removal of the old building was awarded to William McComb, in which he agreed to complete the work within thirty days.

On June 14, 1887, the Court authorized expenditures of \$1,800 for furniture and \$1,300 for equipment for the vault.

Completion of the building was officially accepted February 28, 1888, Judge E. C. Stuart, having died a

short time previously and Judge J. N. Wharton having succeeded him. Commissioners at the time of acceptance were T. J. Wilsford, R. J. Garrett, J. T. Daniels, and J. H. Davis.

Previously, in 1887, the cornerstone of the building had been "leveled" by Marlin Lodge No. 152 of the Masons, assisted by the Masonic Grand Lodge of Texas. Officers of Marlin Lodge No. 152, at that time, were W. B. Shields, Worshipful Master; W. D. Kyser, Senior Warden; I. J. Pringle, Junior Warden; W. A. Oltorf, Treasurer; C. T. Curry, Secretary; C. J. Bartlett, Senior Deacon; M. C. Brewer, Junior Deacon; R. Rogers, Senior Steward; S. A. Silverman, Junior Steward; A. S. Holloway, Tiler. (S. A. Silverman was present when the cornerstone of the 1936 court house was leveled.")

Officers of the Masonic Grand Lodge of Texas, who assisted in "leveling" in 1887, were A. J. Rose, Most Worshipful Grand Master; Anson Rainey, Deputy Grand Master; W. S. Fry, Grand Senior Warden; A. S. Richardson, Grand Junior Warden; H. Scherffins, Grand Treasurer; and T. W. Hudson, Grand Secretary.

Celebrating the occasion, ranchmen of Falls County contributed beeves for a big barbecue, et cetera, and people came from miles around in their farm wagons, buggies and "surries," the newspaper recorded. On the evening a big dance was held in the park on Ward Street (a place now traversed by the Marlin-Waco highway and one edge of it by the Missouri Pacific Railway dump), where a pavilion had been erected.

Into the cornerstone were placed souvenirs, which remained in silent darkness until 1936, when they were retrieved at the time the building was torn down and replaced by another court house. In 1946, the old cornerstone reposed on the court house lawn and inscribed upon one face are "Erected 1886-7. E. C. Stuart, Judge, E. T. Heiner, Architect. A. Baumbach, Builder"; on the other "Marlin Lodge No. 152 A. F. & A. M. A. J. Rose, G. M. — A. D. 1887."



**DESCRIPTION.** The building was tall and shapely, standing plainly visible from a wide radius. It was three stories high, its roof raised and its clock-tower extending considerably above the roof. The offices of the sheriff, tax assessor and collector, treasurer, county agricultural agent, home demonstration agent, county clerk, county judge and the county court room were on the first floor (ground floor). Steps at either end of the building (east and west) led to the second and third floors. On the second floor were the district court room, offices of district judge, district clerk and county superintendent; also (southwest corner), was the jury room to whence juries retired while legal arguments were settled, or while preparing verdicts.

The district court room was spacious, taking up an estimated seventy-five per cent of the entire second floor, its walls extending through the third floor, making its ceilings two stories high. The judge's stand and jury seats were on the south near the windows. The room was provided with long, concentric benches placed upon successively raised floors.

The third floor contained offices of the county (or district) attorney and Justice of the Peace (on the east) and the office of the county surveyor and janitor (on the west).

At various times during the life of the building, of course, other offices occupied space in the building.

**THE TOWN CLOCK.** Of special note was the huge town clock, in the tall clock-tower, and its gong, which rang out the hours of day or night. December 14, 1887, the Commissioners Court, consisting of Judge Wharton, J. T. Wilsford, R. J. Garrett, J. T. Daniels and J. H. Davis, "ordered that the county judge be and is hereby appointed a committee to act with the committee appointed by the city council (Marlin) in purchasing a clock for the court house."

The court's records, relating to the clock, are brief and one book of the minutes of the City Council of Marlin, also, were lost, so authentic details of the purchase and installation of the clock were not available. Accord-

ing to general understanding (and from accounts in *The Marlin Democrat*) movement for the town-clock originated with the City Council, a leader being the late J. H. Robertson, who served on the Council for many years. (He was a Confederate veteran.) He worked, both for the people and for the Council in behalf of installation of the clock and he is given much credit for



Left: Clock and dials, after removal from clock tower. Standing behind dial: Frank Petzold, engineer for the County during construction of 1939 Courthouse.  
Right: Memorial Cabin, on Courthouse lawn, built of logs from pioneer Falls County homes, by the UDC.

its purchase. How much the clock cost, and who paid for it, is not shown, although it is generally understood the county paid one-half and the city one-half. Also, originally, its upkeep and attention (winding and setting) was divided equally between city and county, as to cost, but eventually that responsibility was assumed by the county, since it employed a full-time janitor and keeper of the court yard.

**SPIRIT OF THE CLOCK.** People of Marlin and Falls County depended considerably upon the clock when they were within sight and hearing distance of it. Its faces were over five feet in diameter, visible for a wide radius, a face for each direction, north, south, east, and west. Each hour its gong (bell) rang out the time. It was kept in time, always within two or three minutes of the official, and people acquired a habit of relying upon it.

Even ten years after the clock was removed (after the new court house was built, 1939) people were often seen looking in its direction and frequently someone re-

marked, "I surely do miss the old clock. I look for it, listen for it — and it's not there."

A few years before the clock was dismantled the following incident took place, illustrative of its tradition. A workman of long-standing for Nash-Robinson and Company (Marlin), possessed an excellent, though over-size, watch that kept "perfect" time. The Negro was humble, well-liked and always anxious to please, but possessed some temperament, especially when he sensed someone trying to impose upon his good nature, or intelligence. One day a banker asked, "What time it is?"

The town clock was in plain view and had just rung out "Ten." The workman replied, "If you don't own a watch, Mister, keep in mind the town clock is for pore pepul."

The town clock, of course, was used by rich and poor, men and women, people of all nationalities. It was easily seen, dependable, and tunefully rang out each hour, and was heard practically everywhere in the town.

**COURTHOUSE OF 1939.** In 1887 Falls County was out of its swaddling clothes and destined to grow rapidly. As it grew, the business connected with it grew and, also, wear and tear and age took its toll. In August, 1938, the Commissioners Court again took under consideration the adequacy and safety of its court house. It was presented a proposal from the Marlin Chamber of Commerce, in which that organization offered to furnish an architect to prepare plans for a new structure, with a view to petitioning the Public Works Agency for assistance in building one. At that time the officers and directors of the Marlin Chamber of Commerce were J. B. Lewis, President; E. B. Holloway, Vice-President; G. H. Olinger, second Vice-President; Paul Scheiblich, Treasurer; George S. Buchanan, Secretary-Manager; and B. C. Bratton, Dr. J. W. Torbett, Sr., Dr. N. D. Buie, Nathan Levy and Cecil Glass.

Arthur E. Thomas of Dallas was employed by the Chamber of Commerce to prepare plans. He conferred with the Court on a number of occasions and in August, 1938, the Court authorized County Judge Carroll Pearce



and Mr. Thomas to submit a petition to the Public Works Agency for a federal grant to aid in building a new court house. At the same time, the Court called an election for September 24, for \$130,000.00 improvement bonds, with which to pay the county's part of the total cost. Between September 1st and election day, Mr. Thomas finished his plans and presented them.

**TEMPORARY SET-BACK.** On the night of September 24, at the office of Judge Pearce, a group of interested citizens awaited the result of the election, only to find the improvement bond had lost by a vote of 2,057 to 179. Immediately, steps were taken to keep the issue alive and within a few days petitions were submitted for another election. After a number of public meetings and speeches, explaining the necessity of expensive repairs and the need for a new court house, the Court called for another election to be held October 29, 1938. A number of citizens worked in behalf of the movement and explained to the public its value and need. A few weeks before election day, a State Inspector declared the old building unsafe. Part of a concrete beam on the first floor had fallen and previously, the walls of the structure had developed cracks and had been reinforced with long horizontal steel rods.

**BONDS VOTED.** On election day, October 29th, a majority of the people favored the bond issue, voting 1,821 for it to 705 against. Fort Worth (Texas) offices of the Public Works Agency were notified immediately and advised officially November 1st, after the Court had canvassed the returns. Machinery was set in motion for a PWA grant.

Working against time, the Court received bids December 27, 1938, for demolishing the old building and building a new one. The Public Works Agency had set January 1, 1939, as the dead line. Hill and Combs of San Antonio (Texas) was successful bidder and its bid, together with those for heating and plumbing, electrical work and furnishings ran the total cost almost to \$219,000.00.

Since work was due to start January 1, 1939, an exodus of county officials began immediately. For a time the county's business was transacted from a number of buildings, including Memorial Cabin (on the Court House Square), the City Hall, and two vacant business buildings. Demolishing the old building started before January 1, at 11:15 A. M., December 29th.

**OLD CORNERSTONE OPENED.** Some walls of the 1887 court house were torn down with difficulty, but with modern machinery progress was rapid. On January 10, 1939 (at 10:00 A. M.) a metal box was lifted from the old cornerstone by Sheriff L. O. Hay and carried to the Sheriff's office (temporary office) in Memorial Cabin, where it was opened in the presence of District Judge Terry Dickens; County Judge John C. Patterson (who had succeeded Judge Carroll Pearce); Commissioner M. M. Allen; Mayor of Marlin, J. M. Kennedy; Z. W. Bartlett, of Marlin, who was present at the laying of the cornerstone in 1887; Deputy Sheriffs E. A. Stallworth and Brady Pamplin; Constable Jack Powell; and a crowd of people, some of whom were present at laying of the cornerstone in 1887, and groups of students from Wilson and Hamilton schools of Falls County.

From a box, taken from the cornerstone, were found:

A copy of "The Houston (Texas) Evening Age," dated June 11, 1887, which was not in good condition.

A copy of City Ordinances of Marlin, dated June 2, 1886, compiled by William Shelton, one-time Secretary and one-time Mayor of Marlin.

Copy of a speech made by Roger Q. Mills of Corsicana, delivered before a meeting of the Anti-Prohibition Club, May 21, 1886.

Large filing envelop containing blue-prints, showing north and south elevations and specifications of the court-house of 1887 as drawn by W. T. Heiner, architect. Information outside the envelope was written by R. E. Powell, deputy in the county clerk's office. It was signed and sealed by George G. Slater, county clerk.

Small "New Testament," badly damaged with age.

Copy of the Marlin Weekly Ball, published by T. C. Oltorf too badly damaged and too old to show date.

Roll of officers and members of Marlin Masonic Lodge No. 152, brittle, and names illegible.

Another document, believed to be the muster roll of the Marlin Rifles, illegible.

Small envelope, apparently containing seed, which were shriveled and dried.

Belgium 5 centimes piece, on one side of which was "L'Union Fait Force" around the edge of a crown; and on the other, "Leopold." Date on the coin was illegible, although it appeared to be 1870, or some other date of the 1870's.

Other scraps of paper were found, but writings on them were illegible and it was impossible to tell what the scraps indicated.

#### **CORNERSTONE OF 1939 COURT HOUSE LEVELED.**

Progress on the new court house (of 1939) was rapid and in a few weeks, less than a year after the Commissioners Court had set machinery in motion, the cornerstone was leveled July 4, 1939, by the Grand Masonic Lodge of Texas. Senator Tom Connally (of Falls County), largely through whose efforts Falls County's application for a grant from Public Works Agency was obtained, and who was scheduled to deliver the address on the occasion, was unable to be present, due to unforeseen circumstances, and the Reverend William D. Daugherty of Waco, Grand Chaplain of the Masonic Lodge of Texas, was orator.

Grand Master Lee Lockwood of Waco conducted the ceremonies before a large crowd of Falls County and Central Texas people. Other Grand Lodge Officers present included Grand Secretary George H. Belew of Waco; Grand Treasurer J. J. Gallaher of Waco (formerly of Marlin) and Grand Chaplain Daugherty of Waco.

**CORNERSTONE SEALED.** A large copper box had been provided in which to place for safe-keeping papers, souvenirs and other articles for future generations. A number of articles had been prepared and placed within



the box and others were put in it at the time of the leveling. While the ceremony was in progress, mechanics sealed the copper casket by soldering after which it was placed in the stone. Contents, of course, will not be known until the cache is opened decades from 1939. Generally, it contained the following: A Bible, records of Masonic Lodges of Falls County, and of the Grand Masonic Lodge; copies of Falls County and State papers, including the *Marlin Democrat* of July 4, 1939, daily and semi-weekly issues; records of the county and city; pictures of the old courthouses and public buildings of city; membership rosters of Marlin and Rosebud Chambers of Commerce, Marlin Lions and Rotary clubs, Marlin's post of the American Legion; pictures of county judges and commissioners, who were in office when the movement began and when the court house was completed; and advance copy of Senator Connally's speech, prepared for the occasion, but which the Senator did not deliver, because he was detained elsewhere; other records, papers, souvenirs, souvenirs and papers removed from the cache of the cornerstone of the 1887 court house.

**OFFICIALS MOVE INTO NEW EDIFICE.** Work on the building, its equipment and furnishings was practically completed by December 1, 1939, and by January 1, 1940, county officials and other officers were in their respective places. George B. Collier, caretaker of the building and grounds, said within a short time after January 1, all work was completed.

**PLAQUE—CORNERSTONE** A bronze plaque on the east inside wall at the south entrance of the building contains the following:

Federal Works Agency  
Public Works Administration

John W. Carmody  
Federal Works Administrator

Franklin D. Roosevelt  
President of the United States

Falls County Court House  
1939

Another similar plaque on the opposite wall of the hallway, contains the following:

Falls County Court House  
John C. Patterson  
County Judge  
M. M. Allen  
Commissioner Precinct No. 1  
S. A. Davison  
Commissioners Precinct No. 2  
G. H. Ashbury  
Commissioner Precinct No. 3  
O. U. Chumbley  
Commissioner Precinct No. 4  
Arthur E. Thomas  
Architect  
Hill & Combs  
Contractors

Inscription of the cornerstone, facing east at the northeast corner of the structure, is as follows:

Levelled by the  
Grand Lodge of Texas  
A. F. & A. M.  
Auspices Marlin Lodge 152  
A. D. 1939 A. L. 5939

**POSTMASTER GENERAL HERE.** Three months had passed after the court house of 1939 was in use, when James A. Farley, Postmaster General of the United States, came to Marlin and from the south steps of the new building spoke. Marlin schools were turned out for the visit of the member of President Roosevelt's Cabinet and a large crowd gathered to hear him. On the steps (or landing, which formed a platform) were Acting Postmaster, Mrs. Annie B. Johnson of Marlin, T. B. Higgins, Reagan's postmaster for fifty years, and others. The Postmaster General had said, before arrival, that one of the reasons he came, was to meet Mr. Higgins, who had served so long for the Post Office Department. Mr. Higgins was presented to the Postmaster General during the preliminaries. Dr. N. D. Buie presented the speaker, who commented on "Texas weather, congratulated Falls County for its new court house and complimented Falls County's U. S. Senator Tom Connally."

Among those who came to Marlin for the occasion were former Texas governors, Dan Moody and Pat Neff.



### COURT HOUSE SCENES

**Top:** County officials during and immediately after building of the 1939 Court House. Left to right: Fred Holland, County Clerk; George B. Collier, Custodian of building and grounds; Fred B. Glass, Tax Assessor-Collector; O. U. Chumbley, Commissioner; Terry Dickens, District Judge; J. A. Phipps (who succeeded Miss Janie Belle Ray), District Clerk (behind Judge Dickens); L. O. Hay, Sheriff; Carroll Pearce, County Judge; Peyton Burke, County Auditor; Miss Janie Belle Ray, District Clerk (who was succeeded by J. A. Phipps); S. A. Davison, Commissioner; John C. Patterson, County Judge, who succeeded Carroll Pearce; G. H. Ashbury, Commissioner; Joe B. Turner, County School Superintendent (behind Judge Freeman); Miss Elizabeth Freeman, Justice of the Peace. (Commissioner M. M. Allen was not present. Picture in lower right picture.)

**Lower left:** Postmaster General James A. Farley of the United States (at the microphone) addressing a crowd of Falls County citizens and visitors. He expressed appreciation of Postmaster T. B. Higgins, who had served fifty years as postmaster at Reagan, Falls County, Texas. Mr. Higgins is seen in the foreground.

**Lower right:** At the opening of the cache in the corner stone of the Court House of 1887. Left to Right: M. M. Allen, Commissioner, who later became County Judge; L. O. Hay, Sheriff, Mayor J. M. Kennedy of Marlin; Zenas W. Bartlett, who was present when the 1887 corner stone was leveled; Terry Dickens, District Judge; John C. Patterson, County Judge, who later became District Judge. Cache was opened in the Memorial Cabin on the Court House Square.



## CHAPTER XVI

### Capricious Rio Brazos Creates Problems

**LOS BRAZOS DE DIOS.** The largest river in Texas runs practically through the center of Falls County, about fifteen degrees west of north and south to the Gulf of Mexico. Its full name is Los Brazos de Dios — meaning “arms of God,” the name given, according to legend, because thirsty travelers found life-saving water in it, the *padre* blessed the stream and called it Los Brazos de Dios — “Arms of God.”

In Falls County, the river has “a shallow valley two to three miles wide, bordered by low moderately sloping upland escarpments, which, in many places, mark the boundaries between the flood plains and the flat ancient stream terraces, lying high above overflow,” the 1932 “Soil Survey of Falls County, Texas.” by M. W. Beck of the Bureau of Chemistry and Soils, in cooperation with the Texas Agricultural Experiment Station, records. “The terraces gradually merge with the still higher uplands.”

**RED ALLUVIAL SOIL OF THE VALLEY.** Red alluvial soil in the valley was brought down stream from north and northwest Texas in centuries past. Heavy rainfalls above the County frequently sent the river out of its banks and over the valley. The still, or slow-moving, water of these overflows deposited silt between the escarpments “two or three miles apart.”

**RIVER CHANNEL SHIFTED.** The channel of the river, as it passed through the alluvial valley, has changed many times. As long as the stream ran slow, it clung to its channel, but when filled by heavy rains on its great watershed, it became angry and swift. It often washed away the alluvial soil, or created new channels, depending upon the nature of the soil, soil elevations, velocity and persistency of the flow. Perhaps, the most marked

shift of record took place a few years prior to 1866. Edmund Pierson, County Surveyor at one time, drew a map of old Viesca, early townsite laid out by his father, John G. W. Pierson, and upon the map appears notations of channels of the stream prior to and after 1866. Prior to the change, the falls of river was between one and one-half and two miles southwest of the present falls. Northwest of Marlin the channel has shifted westward in recent years, leaving piers of the former "Rockdam Bridge" standing on dry lands about a half mile to the east, on the Dr. N. D. Buie farm. Frequently the river had changed its course, taking from, or adding to, farms on either side of the stream.

**CHARACTERISTIC FLOODS.** The Brazos drains a vast section of northern, northwest, central and south Texas with an average annual run-off (measured in Falls County) of 2,779,000 acre-feet. (An acre-foot of water is the amount of water required to cover an acre to a depth of one foot, or 43,560 cubic feet, or 325,800 gallons). The maximum yearly run-off (during heavy rain-falls), gauged in the County, is 5,356,000 acre-feet. (Run-off information was obtained from the 1945-1946 Texas Almanac, which summarized it from records of the State Board of Water Engineers and the United States Geological Survey, Austin, Texas.)

Most of the time, even in years of heavy rains, the flow was slow and serene within the County, but when heavy rains sent water raging through the channel and over the banks into the valley "two or three miles" wide, the stream became menacing and destructive. It destroyed crops and stockmen were compelled to evacuate livestock on short notice. Sometime the "rises" came so suddenly, heavy losses were sustained and even people lost their lives by drowning.

**FLOODS BRING PROBLEMS.** Not only were the floods damaging to farms and livestock, but they created vexatious problems, in providing safe means of crossing the stream, something most important to Falls County, where people live on both sides. Bridges were often washed

out, ferries were rendered unsafe and fording places temporarily eliminated. The Commissioners Court, from the time the County was created, labored to provide dependable means of crossing the river. So persistently have bridges succumbed to highwater that in 1946, only one bridge remained across the stream.

**EARLY MEANS OF CROSSING.** When the first settlers came, they were attracted to the river, because they needed water, fish, and the defense the stream offered against savage Indians. A river is a partial blockade against a stealthy enemy. When the settlers wanted to cross, they "swam their oxen (or teams)"; forded the stream or used rafts and canoes. Even, in the earliest times, however, they longed for and planned more dependable means of crossing. It was in the 1850's—after the county was created—that the people got around to making crossings reasonably safe and continuous.

**EARLY FERRIES.** The Falls County Commissioners Court records show that on November 20, 1854, Churchill Jones, a large land and slave owner, who lived near the Falls (early Falls), was granted a license to operate a ferry there. On the same date, J. W. McKissack was granted a license to operate a ferry on the "Marlin-Waco Road"—which ran northwestward from Marlin, crossed the river at "Rockdam Crossing," and thence to Gurley (near the present city of Satin) to Waco; other ferries were licensed and in operation at various times, all serving their purposes, until dependable bridges were built.

Costs of crossing the river by ferry are indicated in the record when Mr. Jones was permitted to charge as follows: for all wagons, \$1.00; for each yoke of oxen, 25 cents; for each span of horses, 25 cents; for carriages, \$1; for man and horse, 25 cents; for man on foot, 10 cents; for single horse, 12½ cents; cows, sheep, and hogs, 5 cents per head. License to operate a ferry cost a fee, usually about \$5.00.



The County was about eight years old when one of its courthouses burned and in it perished some of the minutes of the Commissioners Court. Those minutes undoubtedly would have thrown more light upon early ferries and other means of crossing the river, but from 1858 to November, 1874, there are no Commissioners Court records. Records of 1874 reveal that a bridge across the river was in operation. They also refer to Stuart's Ferry and the indication is, Stuart's Ferry was not far from the present bridge on the Marlin-Chilton Road. There are also references to "Campbell's Ferry," with indications it was in the vicinity of Cedar Springs. After 1874, other ferries are referred to and it is evident the people depended upon ferries for some time.

**TOLL BRIDGES.** Even the building of bridges by the county may have been delayed for some time (perhaps for financial and other reasons), for it appears early bridges across the Brazos were toll bridges. Early records, without explaining why, refer to the "Belton Road" and the "Turnpike Road," both of which were identical as to direction. Perhaps, "Belton Road," originally referred to an earlier road, still in use in 1946, as a red-land, unimproved road extending eastward from the river bridge to Marlin, almost in line with the bridge; and the "Turnpike Road," forerunner of the present highway, swings southward east of the bridge, forming an S-turn and heading east to Marlin (Bean's Hill). Both of these roads, apparently, signified the road running westward from the county seat of Falls County to the County seat of Bell County (at Belton).

Since some of the minutes of the Commissioners Court (1858-1874) are lost, it seems natural that the present Marlin-Chilton highway was once the "Turnpike Road." About where the present (1946) bridge is located, a ferry was operated early and later a toll bridge. A. P. Tomlinson, president of the Old Settlers and Veterans Association, who has crossed the river many times ("Belton Crossing") said that in the 1870's an old wooden bridge spanned the river there. It was built on pilings, a few

feet apart, driven into the river bed. He said people always crossed with some foreboding of danger, especially after the bridge had been in use awhile.

**WOODEN BRIDGE SHORT-LIVED.** The bridge was short-lived, naturally, because its foundation was unstable and the pilings were subject to damage by driftwood and debris, especially during flood time. The bridge required constant watching and frequent repairs and, even then, was not always considered safe. It was a toll bridge, meaning every person, animal or vehicle passing over was required to pay toll.

Through the courtesy of William T. Curry, Marlin attorney, it is reported that on January 1, 1875, the "Falls County Turnpike Road and Bridge Company, a corporation created by special act of the Legislature" prior to that date, was operating a toll bridge across the river and there were proceedings in Court because of an injury someone sustained upon the bridge.

**COMING OF STEEL BRIDGES.** It is not known what happened to the old wooden bridge; nor it is known the exact date the Commissioners Court awarded a contract for building the first bridges with steel spans. In February, 1898, when B. H. Rice was County Judge, George S. Cousins, J. T. Owen, P. Peiper, and L. Fiser, commissioners, an order was passed to "erect a bridge over the Brazos River at Rockdam," the citizens of Marlin having provided a bonus of \$2,500.00 and guaranteeing "right of way for a first class road, not less than 45 feet wide, and 60 feet when practical, without cost to the county." (This road, of course, led from Marlin, northwestward to the river, thence to Gurley [near Satin] and to Waco.)

It was not possible to find the exact date of construction of the first steel-span bridge at Belton (Turnpike) Crossing, although, a number of people recollect it was in the 1880's. After 1880 and prior to 1907, the records refer to "repairs to the bridge" and "removal of drift wood." Then on June 8, 1908, when D. H. Boyles was County Judge, T. E. Battle, J. C. Kennedy, O. C. Johns

and J. J. Fulton, were commissioners, a bond election (for \$50,000) was ordered "for the purpose of erecting a bridge across the Brazos River at Belton Crossing and repairing the bridge across the Brazos River at the Smith Ferry Crossing." According to a number of people, the east span of the Belton bridge had succumbed to the caprices of the river and fell into the channel late in 1907 or early 1908.

The span ( east end), evidently, was completed in 1908, for the steel plate on the present span shows "1908." Evidence that a ferry was in operation during the time the span was out, is in the minutes, that "Bob Mullins released and J. W. Sherrell appointed ferrymen to take charge of and run ferry boat at the old Belton Crossing on Marlin and Belton Road --- paid for his service ---."

**BRIDGES BUILT — THEN LOST.** On December 16, 1910, when W. E. Hunnicutt was County Judge and commissioners were James Barton, J. T. Burke, William Ocker and T. C. DeGraffenreid, the minutes show that \$16,000.00 was provided "for building the bridge across the river at Highbank ---" to include "new span complete and reinforcing old piers, repairing and painting old part of the bridge now standing ---." This indicated a steel span of bridge had become unstable, another had collapsed or had not been completed, making further expenditures necessary. What happened is not apparent, but a number of people related that difficulties had been encountered by contractors, because of unstable foundations for the piers, and the bridge had not been completed and the unfinished part stood for some time, necessitating more work.

Two years later, after D. D. Tindle and S. S. Steward had replaced Mr. Ocker and Mr. DeGraffenreid as commissioners, "It was ordered by the Commissioners Court that --- he and are hereby awarded the contract for rebuilding the bridge across the Brazos River at Highbank."

Joe LaBarbera who has lived at Highbank many years, said in 1946 that the bridge at this crossing succumbed



to the devastating flood of 1913, and since then, no bridge has spanned the river in the vicinity of Highbank.

Other bridges were constructed southwest of Marlin on the Marlin-Cedar Springs road, and at the Rockdam crossing, northwest of Marlin. Both bridges required repairs from time to time and about 1914 one span of the Rockdam bridge collapsed and the other was taken down. (The river changed its course there and the old piers stand on dry land about a half of a mile to the east.) In 1935, the Cedar Springs bridge collapsed. Neither of the bridges were replaced (1946), although efforts on the part of citizens and county officials to replace the Cedar Springs bridge were made in 1935 and 1936.

**MEMORABLE FLOODS.** While the Brazos is known for its characteristic overflows and high-water, floods of special note came in 1899 and 1913. Both floods were disastrous to farms and livestock in Falls County. The 1899 flood resulted from heavy rains and storms from June 27th to July 1st, according to the 1945-1946 Texas Almanac. The 1913 flood was the result of rains and storms from December 1st to December 5th, of that year. To people living in 1946, the 1913 flood is more vivid. In both years, of course, the water left the banks of the river and spread over the entire valley, making the river two to three (even more) miles wide. In 1913, people got in boats at Bean's Hill, a half mile from the court house, and got out in the edge of the town of Satin, eight, or more, miles away.

**FLOOD CONTROL MEASURES.** Measures have been taken by the federal government to control flood waters of the Brazos, to prevent accompanying rapid erosion of land and, at the same time, harness the power of the stream. Construction of dams on its tributaries by various municipalities have resulted in some improvement. Of special benefit to Falls County was one on the Bosque River, which empties into the Brazos, near Waco, built by Waco citizens to form a lake for their water supply.

Completion of Possum Kingdom Dam in Palo Pinto County by the Federal Government under the Brazos River Conservation and Reclamation District in 1940, further relieved possibilities of disastrous floods. The Flood Control Act of 1945 provided for construction of other facilities, designed to prevent floods and erosion. Included in the Act will be construction of Whitney Dam on the Brazos between Hill and Bosque counties, and, tentatively, other dams in Knox and Stonewall counties, Palo Pinto County, Hood County, and Bosque and Johnson Counties. All of these installations are above Falls County and are expected to prevent repetition of overflows and accompanying disasters within the county.

The Board of the Brazos River Conservation and Reclamation District consists of twenty-one members, and Falls County is represented (1946) on that Board by Dr. Thomas G. Glass of Marlin. George G. Chance of Bryan is president of the Board.

**BRIDGE COLLAPSE OF 1922.** Flood prevention measures (still incomplete) were somewhat in the stage of planning in 1922, although Waco, for practical purposes, had built Lake Waco on the Bosque River. The year of 1922 had been a rainy one and the Brazos had been on a series of rises. The constant rise and fall of water damaged the west abutment of the bridge on the Chilton-Marlin road. The damage was of special interest to Marlin, because prospectors had discovered oil not far from Chilton. Efforts to avoid interruption of traffic brought tragedy which threw sadness over the county for months to follow.

Headlines of the *Marlin Democrat* of May 10, 1922, read, "Brazos Bridge Safe — Travel Not Interrupted." Two days later a headline read, "Oil Runs Over at Top — Gray Wildcat Holds High Attraction of Oil Scouts and Public."

Immediately thereafter, the newspaper told of hail and a six inch rain, the river rising and the Marlin Chamber of Commerce members, urged by the Good

Roads Committee, going in numbers to the bridge and working to protect "the western approaches of the bridge."

Then — on May 16th, came the tragic headlines: "Four Dead in Appalling River Bridge Tragedy — Pier Crumbles Dropping Span of Structure While Workmen are Making Repairs — One Body Recovered from River — Three are Missing."

People on the span, when it collapsed, about 1:00 P.M., were hurtled into the swollen stream. All except six struggled desperately to save themselves. Some were missing. Those on the banks frantically tried to help, depressed with the realization that Marlin's Mayor, wounded, swam helplessly, one of the town's leading physicians had not come to the surface, the body of one woman had been dragged ashore, a seven-year old lad had disappeared in the water, and others were not accounted for.

Six lost their lives in the disaster: Mayor F. M. Stallworth; Dr. Walter H. Allen; B. J. Briggs, seven-year old son of Mr. and Mrs. Clayton Briggs of Marlin; Mrs. C. Mosely of Beaumont; William Harris (Negro), an employee of a lumber company, and a man named Willokoski. It was eighteen days after the span collapsed, before all of the bodies were recovered. The last was taken from the river fifteen miles below Navasota.

Those thrown into the water and rescued later, caught onto logs and floors-timbers from the bridge — as they drifted downstream. Dr. H. W. Knickerbocker, pastor of the First Methodist Church of Marlin, managed to extricate himself from the water about a mile downstream, almost losing his life in the effort. Most of the others were rescued below the Falls, miles from the scene of the collapse. Rescued were Dr. Knickerbocker, C. M. Jeter, Charlie Phipps, George Falconer, Charles A. Oltorf, Herbert B. Rice, J. T. Lee Jones, J. W. Williams, Frank Kasmerowski, A. P. Jones, Frank Dandridge, Will Harris, and P. McGruder.



**U. S. ARMY FURNISHES PONTOON BRIDGE.** A few days after the crash, May 19th, though saddened by the tragedy, but realizing civilization must go on, County Judge E. M. Dodson, G. W. Glass, and N. D. Naman went to Fort Sam Houston (San Antonio) and, resulting therefrom and from the efforts of others, General Hines, in command, sent a pontoon bridge and fifty-five men to Falls County for installation and maintenance, as a temporary bridge, until a new span could be built. About May 25th, the pontoon bridge was in use and remained there until two new spans (replacing the single span) was ready. Special care was taken to see that new piers of the bridge rest on solid rock, Judge Dodson reported.

The plate on the west end of the three-span bridge shows the date — 1922.

**RECREATION ON THE BRAZOS.** When the earliest settlers came, wild game was abundant along the river. The settlers hunted buffalo, deer, bear, wild horses, cattle, antelope, wild turkeys, partridges, wild ducks and other edible and useful game. For sport, and to preserve the more beneficial game, they hunted wolves, panthers, cougars, and wild cats. The Falls was an early famous meeting place "for a bear hunt" and other game — and for fishing. The Reverend Z. N. Morrell, who contributed much to religion in Texas and helped found Baylor University, was attracted to the Falls of the Brazos, because of the abundance of game there.

With the passing of more than a hundred years, things have changed. A few wild ducks, quail, doves, squirrels, and game of lesser importance are all that's left of "wild game abundant" on the Brazos. Fishing continues to be fairly good, but, undoubtedly, fish are considerably less in numbers than they were in pioneer times. Catfish and gaspergoo are the most plentiful, although there are carp and buffalo. Some fishermen relate occasional catches of bass and perch. An unwelcome catch is the gar, which is of no value for food. Its teeth are jagged and it has a way of destroying fish lines and getting away. Fishermen are not pleased with catches of gar.

Perhaps, the most popular fishing spot on the river is Sumpter Hole, about a mile below the Falls. For a considerable distance below the Falls, the water is comparatively shallow, although treacherous. Water swirling around the bend creates shifting and dangerous holes, into which numbers of unsuspecting people, wading, have been plunged, many losing their lives. Sumpter Hole remains ever present — always to be found somewhere “below the Falls in the bend.” Fishing is always good in it, for the water is deep and placid and fish come together there, before crossing the shallow water of the Falls.

**SWIMMING ON THE RIVER.** Several decades ago, swimming and wading in the river was a sport in which every citizen of the county and friends indulged. Within recent years, this sport has become less popular, because people are more concerned about probable disease germs and impurities and prefer the modern swimming pools, in which the water is frequently changed, or purified.

At the turn of the century, and even until the 1920's, swimming and wading at the Falls was popular. About 1900 the Commercial Club of Marlin (forerunner of the Chamber of Commerce) obtained land on the east side of the river, atop a hill overlooking the Falls, and built a spacious club-house and dance hall there. The floor was raised five or six feet above ground and the space underneath was utilized for various purposes, including storage of fishing and other recreational equipment. The spacious room above (the floor space) was the scene of many fish-frys, banquets, and dances, although more often, the luncheon and dinner assemblies were held outside, after which dances took place in the club-house. Sometimes rallies, with speeches, special programs, et cetera, were held in the club-house.

A number of years after the club-house was abandoned by the Commercial Club, it continued to be used for assemblies and for family and other private parties. Eventually, the club-house disappeared — after it had been popular for several decades.



### SCENES ON THE BRAZOS

**Upper Left and Lower Right:** Views of the three-span bridge. At top (looking east): the river flowed madly, threatening to leave its banks. At bottom (looking west): the river was more serene.

**Upper Right and Lower Left:** Over-flow scenes. Traffic was blocked on the "Rock-dam Road," with water extending westward for more than two miles (upper-right picture). Lower picture: Water stops traffic over the Chilton-Marlin Road. (Over-flows are becoming less frequent in recent years.)

**Center:** Fish-fry (et cetera) at a Club House on the east side overlooking the Falls. Popular resort about the turn of the century, the house was abandoned in the second decade after 1900 and eventually demolished.



# OLD SETTLERS AND VETERANS ASSOCIATION

*(Summarized from the Minutes of the Association)*

## PURPOSES

The Old Settlers and Veterans Association is a non-political, non-sectarian, patriotic organization of friends and neighbors, its members identified with the founding and building of Falls County, Texas.

Each year, at its own grounds, annual reunions are held, where friendships are renewed, new friends made and programs to promote patriotism and reverence for the county's, state's and nation's builders are featured.

The Association's grounds and improvements, including electric lights and power, a waterworks system and other conveniences are located in the geographical center of Falls County, at what is known as "Tomlinson Hill."

In addition to the annual reunions and meetings of the Association and its members, many family reunions and assemblies of other organizations are held on the grounds annually. "Tomlinson Hill" is widely known throughout Central Texas and among those annually attending its reunions are many from Texas and other states of the nation.

ORGANIZED IN 1908. With inspiration for preserving the history of Falls County and honoring its builders, a group of Falls County citizens met in Lott, July 4, 1908, and resolved that "the Old Settlers Association of Falls County be organized." The minutes of the organization, in the hand-writing of its first and long-time secretary, Edmund Pierson, show the following organizers: J. R. Kirkpatrick, W. G. Etheridge, E. T. Wiggins, J. R.

Southwell, J. W. Stephenson, John L. Sylvester, R. R. Pool, Edmund Pierson, L. C. Martin, S. S. Gott, F. O. Porter, J. M. Birkes, E. H. Childress, T. G. Peters, G. G. Gibson, J. N. Beauchamp, W. C. Golding, S. A. Moore, G. A. Hodges, W. D. Lancaster, J. M. Wooley, J. C. Asbury, J. S. Goodman, J. C. Peevey, A. F. Tomlinson, H. F. Greer, J. J. Hodges, J. H. Parham, Les Bloxom, G. L. Peters and Young Taylor.

Apparently little more was done at this first meeting, than organize, but in succeeding years at Lott, Marlin and Tomlinson Hill annual reunions were held, which became famous throughout Central Texas.

J. W. Stephenson was elected first president; George A. Hodges, vice-president; W. G. Etheridge, chaplain; Edmund Pierson, secretary and Forrest Gaither, assistant secretary. At the suggestion of J. R. Kirkpatrick, a committee was named at the first meeting to draft by-laws for the new association. W. G. Etheridge, George A. Hodges and F. O. Porter, were appointed.

FIRST REUNION—1909. Next year, July 3, 1909, at Marlin, the Association held its first reunion and in the minute-book is fastened a copy of the program printed in two colors, red and blue, with "Compliments of Marlin Commercial Club." The program shows the meeting was called "to order by the President, J. W. Stephenson of Blevins; Invocation was by the Chaplain, Rev. W. G. Etheridge of Lott; Address of Welcome by Hon. F. S. Heffner of Marlin; Responses by the Rev. Jake Hodges of Kosse and Rev. W. G. Etheridge; Address of Welcome by Hon. George H. Carter, President of the Marlin Commercial Club; Response by Hon. J. J. Swann of Chilton—to be followed by recess and basket dinner."

For the afternoon: "2 p. m.—Call to order by President J. W. Stephenson of Blevins; Address by Hon. Z. I. Harlan of Marlin; Reading of the minutes of previous meeting and enrollment of members; Election of officers and selection of next meeting place."



### OFFICERS AND DIRECTORS OLD SETTLERS AND VETERANS ASSOCIATION

The above officers and directors (and former officers and directors) inspired and directed publication of this "History of Falls County, Texas."

**Upper Row** (left to right: Mrs. C. R. Eddins, Secretary Roy Eddins, Miss Maureen Pierson.

**Second Row from Top:** Vice-president Bradley Hodges, former Vice-president S. W. Gaines, Frank C. Oltorf.

**Center:** President Albert P. Tomlinson.

**Second Row from Bottom:** R. E. Ruble, Joe B. Turner, Louis E. Landrum.

**Bottom Row:** Chaplain D. E. Wooley, Miss Mae Hutchings, Frank L. Hodges.



Officers elected at the first reunion were J. W. Stephenson of Blevins, president; George A. Hodges of Lott, vice-president; Edmund Pierson of Marlin, secretary; S. S. Gott of Lott, treasurer; and Rev. W. G. Etheridge of Lott, Chaplain. ( The only difference in the list of officers shown on the program and those recorded in the minutes, is the addition of Mr. Gott as treasurer. Forrest Gaither, according to the minutes, was Assistant-secretary. Later, Mr. Gaither served as second president of the Association.)

While Mr. Etheridge, George A. Hodges and F. O. Porter were named in 1908 as a committee on by-laws, after "Honorable Z. I. Harlan had spoken on the subject, 'Early Settlement of Falls County,' the following were appointed in 1909: F. O. Porter, Frank Bratton and D. H. Boyles." The committee submitted a report, which was adopted.

PURPOSES SET FORTH. Summed up, the report reveals that the name of the association "shall be the Old Settlers Association of Falls County." (Later, the name was changed to "Old Settlers and Confederate Veterans Association" and in 1946, cognizant of three other wars since the one of 1861-1865, the word "Confederate" was dropped, so that the name reads (1946) "Old Settlers and Veterans Association.") The minutes show the object of the Association "shall be to promote the social, moral, intellectual and progressive interest not only of its membership, but the entire county; that we may be brought into closer relationship with each other and become better acquainted one with another; that our association with the fast disappearing pioneers of our county and state may brighten and quicken our interest in the history and traditions of our county."

The by-laws, of course, defined membership requirements, recording "there shall be no fees required for entrance, or memberships in the association." It outlined duties of the respective officers and executive committee, provided for election of officers, etc.

Of significant note is: "that all partisan politics be strictly prohibited in the meetings and deliberations of the association and that all speakers who shall, from time to time, address the association be requested to eliminate from their addresses all partisan politics."

**MEMBERSHIP REQUIREMENTS.** Membership, according to the early requirements, was open only to those who had settled within the county prior to 1887, but subsequently the rule was amended to include "all white persons who have been citizens of Falls County ten years and all native born female white citizens who have arrived at the age of 18." Still later it was amended again, to afford membership to "all Confederate (and later, all) veterans and their male descendents who have reached 21 and female descendents who have reached 18."

At the first reunion in 1909, there were many survivors of the great War between the States, who had organized themselves into "The Willis L. Lang Camp of Confederate Veterans." They were "Invited to meet with this association at the regular meetings." Older members of the Association report that on that date veterans of the Confederacy were officially included in the membership. The first official reference in the minutes to the addition of the Confederate veterans, was on November 14, 1911, which mentioned "the Executive Committee of the Old Settlers and Confederate Veterans Association of Falls County"—thus fixing the name of the Association. At this same meeting, it was shown that "it is the sense of this committee that this Association obtain a charter and the Secretary is authorized ---."

**CHARTER OBTAINED IN 1911** (for the "Old Settlers and Confederate Veterans Association of Falls County, Texas"). The charter was obtained, showing it was filed in the office of the Secretary of State on December 14, 1911. As an addendum to the purposes of the Association, the charter discloses it "is for the support of an educational institution, to-wit: to teach the rising and younger generations the true history of the South and the perpetuation of the memory of those who engaged

in the Civil War; and of the early pioneers who underwent many hardships in the settlement of Texas; and the establishment and perpetuation of the institution of our present form of government."

The charter was signed by John M. Jolly, Edmund Pierson and J. H. Robertson of Marlin; F. B. Bratton of Kosse; N. R. Watkins and F. O. Porter of Lott. (It is interesting to note that when the application for the charter was signed by its officers, the late Zenas W. Bartlett of Marlin, a Notary Public, acknowledged it. Also, after the charter was returned from Austin, it was certified as "filed for record in my office — December 16, 1911. (Signed) W. W. Snell, Clerk of the County Court of Falls County, Texas").

**UDC ACTIVITY IN THE ASSOCIATION.** The Confederates became a part of the organization in 1909. On July 4th. of the next year (1910) "the Daughters of the Confederacy were invited to meet with the Association at 10 A. M., July 5th." and, on July 5, (second day of the two-day Reunion), "the president received the Marlin and Lott chapters of the Daughters of the Confederacy."

Since membership in the Association, automatically, included members of the Fall County chapters of the United Daughters of the Confederacy, this notation is proof that the UDC chapters were accepted, as a body. Whether the members were, or were not, accepted as a body is not important. The United Daughters of the Confederacy took active part in the affairs of the Association there afterwards. At the reunion in 1911, response to the addresses of welcome "on behalf of the business men and citizens of Lott" (where the reunion was held) was by "Miss Lillian Glass in behalf of the UDC."

**MEMORIAL SERVICES.** At the first reunion in 1909 (the meeting for organization in 1908 was not considered a reunion) "resolutions of respect" were adopted for "our friends and brother, Young Taylor of Lott, who has departed this life." Ever afterwards, people paused in their celebrations and fellowship, to pay respects to veterans and "Old Settlers"—builders of the county,



state and nation—who had answered the Last Call. Later, Memorial Services, honoring them and their memory, became permanent features of the reunions.

PERMANENT "CAMPING GROUNDS" ACQUIRED. The movement to acquire a permanent meeting place originated sometime between the meeting of 1909 and 1910. In the minutes of the 1910 meeting (July 4th.) appears this paragraph: "The report of the committee to secure land for permanent camping grounds was received and the committee discharged."



Main Entrance to Reunion Grounds

In 1911, at a meeting in Lott, the committee appointed by the executive committee to secure land for a permanent "camping ground" reported to President Forrest Gaither, a number of prospective places were available, including fifteen acres of land at Big Creek at the foot of Bald Hill on the Marlin-Kosse road (five acres of which constitute a park, deeded to the people of Falls County by the late John Cavitt); free use of the Fair Grounds at Marlin; ten acres at Tomlinson springs, belonging to R. E. L. Tomlinson; and some land and a grove of trees belonging to Albert P. Tomlinson between the Marlin-Cedar Springs and the Marlin-Lott roads, which had a house on it.

There were natural advantages to the latter place and after considering all proposals, together with offers for their sale, or use, Albert P. Tomlinson's proposition was accepted and, in subsequent months, the ground was purchased, improved and became the permanent meeting place of the Association. People responded and funds were raised to purchase that part of the property, not donated by Mr. Tomlinson. When the directors met in Marlin, May 18, 1912, the following appears in the record, "it is resolved that the next meeting be held at Tomlinson Hill, August 8 and 9", and the following were appointed to assist in having the grounds ready: Albert Tomlinson, W. A. Tomlinson, N. R. Watkins, R. E. L. Tomlinson, George S. Cousins, Pete Landrum, J. E. Vance, J. P. Norwood, John L. Sylvester, J. P. Bilon, C. D. Newbold, John Peters, George H. Gassaway, W. L. Falconer, Harry Stallworth, Ed Martin, Bob Hamilton, George Storey, B. A. Pierson, Jim Jordan, John Hudson and Henry Childers.

The "Fourth" annual reunion of the association was held that year. (The meeting in 1908 was not considered a reunion, because only a few gathered for organization.)

**TABERNACLE BUILT.** The movement to build a tabernacle originated in 1912. In 1913 directors employed the late Les Bloxom, an active charter member and Confederate veteran, to solicit funds with which to build it. Mr. Bloxom got the funds and the minutes show receipts and expenditures for the project.

In 1914, a petition was presented to the directors from "Mr. Bond et al" for purchase of one acre of the Association's land upon which to build a church. The directors denied the request, explaining they had "no authority to grant such a petition."

Mr. Pierson served as secretary of the Association until his death in 1929. A. P. Tomlinson followed as secretary and, when he became president next year, was succeeded as secretary by W. E. Hodges, who, in turn, was succeeded by Roy Eddins.

Presidents of the Association, in order of their service are: J. W. Stephenson; Forrest Gaither; John M. Jolly;

W. E. Hodges, who served only part of a year and not at a reunion; N. R. Watkins; G. A. Pringle; F. J. Turner; and A. P. Tomlinson (now serving—1947). When Mr. Turner Passed Away, Mrs. C. R. Eddins, who was vice-president, served as president, briefly.

**"MEMORIAL HOUSE" BUILT.** At a meeting of directors and interested Old Settlers in Marlin, May 30, 1936, with F. L. Hodges of Chilton presiding and President A. P. Tomlinson present, Mrs. Roy Levy of Chilton moved "that an old log cabin, or house, be moved to the Reunion Grounds, to be used as a place to display relics and other articles of interest." The motion carried unanimously and a committee was appointed "to locate and arrange details for removal of an historical house on the Reunion Grounds at Tomlinson Hill." Mrs. Levy, Herman Barganier of Reagan, R. E. Ruble of Lott, S. W. Gaines of Chilton and Miss Mae Hutchings of Marlin were named.

At a subsequent meeting of directors and "Old Settlers," June 6, 1936, after discussion, in which Mr. Ruble estimated "the cost will be not less than \$300" and Miss Hutchings said, "encouragement is splendid for making contributions, but contributors want some idea of costs," Mr. Gaines suggested "a larger soliciting committee." The committee was appointed, including representatives from Marlin, Reagan, Stranger, Cedar Springs, Satin, Travis, Durango, Westphalia, Perry, Lott, Powers Chapel and Rosebud.

Herman Barganier reported the following historic houses might be available: (1) The Morrell house at Grady Hair's place at Stranger, (2) the Flowers home, built about 1853, at Powers Chapel, (3) the Taylor place (built about 1852) at Reagan, (4) the house said to be the original home of Rev. Z. N. Morrell at Viesca, which had been moved east of the river and located on the Dr. H. P. Curry farm (reported by Miss Mae Hutchings), and (5) the original Falls county court house, now on Deer creek and belonging to Zenas Bartlett and Mrs. J. W. Bartlett, both of Marlin.



A vote resulted in ordering purchase of the Morrell place at Stranger. The same "log Cabin Committee," with J. E. Masters of Lott added, was directed to supervise moving and rebuilding the house. President Tomlinson and Louis Landrum were designated to point out the spot on the Reunion Grounds where the house would stand. Twenty-two days later (June 28th.) the committee reported the house ready for the 1936 reunion. That year, Mrs. Roy Levy of Chilton and Miss Mae Hutchings of Marlin promoted and supervised the first display of relics and keepsakes in the house. (At the reunion in 1937, the late Tom Chambers of Kosse, who was born in the Morrell house, presented the Association with a copy of Z. N. Morrell's "Flowers and Fruits," from which some of the earliest history of Falls county, was obtained for the association's "History of Falls County, Texas.")

**NIGHT PROGRAMS INAUGURATED.** The directors and other members of the Association met May 23, 1936, at a call meeting and set July 16-17 for the 1936 reunion. Later, June 6th., President Tomlinson suggested a program be arranged for one night (July 16th.), saying, "A lot of people have said it would be a good thing and an excellent added feature." He explained electric lights would be available through the courtesy of Russell Winfrey of Marlin, who had offered the use of his portable electric plant to supply current. The assembly voted to have a night program and President Tomlinson was designated to arrange and supervise it and to call upon others for help, if he desired.

Thus began in 1936, a series of night programs. The first (1936 and 1937) met with such wide approval ever since, two nights' programs were held (Thursdays and Fridays) annually, except when increasing curtailments in the great World War II caused a reduction to only one day and two nights (1943-1944-1945).

**ELECTRIC LINES TO THE GROUNDS.** For four years electric service was provided through the courtesy of Mr. Winfrey and his portable plant. When REA began

building lines in the vicinity of Tomlinson Hill, the Association arranged to have lines run to the Reunion Grounds, broadening facilities of the Association to serve. Lights and power became available at a moment's notice—for Association's assemblies and assemblies of other organizations and families, day or night.

REA workmen completed their work about dark on the first night of the 1940 Reunion (July 19th.). Directors and a large number of interested members assembled at the switch, where a brief commemorative ceremony was held, following which President Tomlinson threw the switch and the crowd cheered at the abundance of light.

**WATERWORKS INSTALLED.** Now that the grounds were provided with lights and power and a dependable well of pure water was nearby, it was natural the Association deemed it advisable to purchase a modern waterworks system. It was needed for drinking purposes, for cleansing the bleachers, tables and platform and, also, to settle the dust (at times) and cool the environs. The system was purchased.

The directors and others met at the Reunion Grounds on the night of May 22, 1941, considered a number of other improvements and authorized their purchase. They included rearranging the wiring system fans and lights. Repairs also were authorized for the cold drinks stand, the lunch and dinner tables, previously provided. Several new tables were ordered built.

**FELT EFFECTS OF WORLD WAR II.** The Association, founded upon patriotism and reverence for institutions of county, state and nation, felt the seriousness of World War II and its members cooperated in observance, in spirit and practice, of the self-denials and restrictions upon home and public activities, but continued its annual meetings. It felt its programs and memorial services added to the spirit of those trying times, because they promoted patriotism, cooperation and unity; also, they encouraged friendliness and exalted those in the war—and those who had served under similar circumstances.

PROGRAMS PRINTED ON FANS. In 1939, free fans were distributed at the Reunion, upon one side of which was printed the program. Thereafter, fans with programs printed on them were distributed, with the view of awarding prizes at the 1950 Reunion to those, bringing in the most fans and widest variety for each year, 1939 to 1949, inclusive.

FALLS COUNTY HISTORY WRITTEN. Minutes of the Association in years since its beginning, frequently referred to efforts to have a history of Falls County written and published in a book. If any were written, they were not available in 1946.

At an executive meeting of the directors, May 18, 1946, called by President A. P. Tomlinson, the question of publishing a history was discussed. The directors felt the Association and its members were in excellent position to get essential historical facts and to assist in the undertaking, but they, also, realized the responsibilities of such an effort. They postponed action, pending further analysis, especially as to costs and research work. Following two more executive meetings, they decided to publish the book and to appeal to the members for assistance. Secretary Roy Eddins was appointed editor. The project called for a book of not less than one hundred fifty pages.

At the 1946 Reunion publicity was given to the effort. Even, before the Reunion, over a hundred of the books were sold, chiefly through the personal efforts of Miss Mae Hutchings of Marlin, a director, and Miss Maurine Pierson, also of Marlin, who was elected director in 1946.





## OLD SETTLERS AND VETERANS REUNION SCENES

**Upper Left:** Pioneers, honored (under the tabernacle) for long service to the county, state and nation—a typical scene.

**Upper Right:** Group, wearing appropriate costumes, directed a display of relics and keepsakes and a pageant. Mrs. Roy Levy and Miss Mae Hutchings were hostesses for the displays.

**Center:** Tabernacle, built about 1913 and improved from time to time. Under it annual patriotic programs were (and are) held.

**Lower Left:** Memorial Cabin. Rebuilt home of Allen Morrell, Mexican War hero and son of the Reverend Z. N. Morrell. It was moved to the Reunion Grounds from the Mr. and Mrs. Grady Hair place at Stranger (Blue Ridge), where it stood as the home of Mr. Morrell and where his pioneer father frequently sojourned for periods. In front of Memorial Cabin are Directors and workers for the Association.

**Lower Right:** Typical scene of "registering" visitors at the annual Reunions. At right (leaning back in chair) is S. W. Gaines, long-time vice-president of the Association.

# INDEX

## History of Falls County, Texas

### ILLUSTRATIONS

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| Artifacts, Indian .....                         | 90  |
| Brazos, Scenes on the .....                     | 290 |
| Cattle Brands, Typical .....                    | 182 |
| Childress, George Campbell (Statute) .....      | 34  |
| Clock, Courthouse (Town) .....                  | 271 |
| Confederate Veterans Memorial .....             | 157 |
| Connally, U. S. Senator Tom .....               | 237 |
| Courthouses, Four of the County's .....         | 262 |
| Courthouse Scenes .....                         | 278 |
| Directors, Old Settlers and Veterans Assn. .... | 293 |
| Entrance, Reunion Grounds .....                 | 297 |
| Falls of the Brazos River .....                 | 1   |
| Fort Milam (Viesca) Marker .....                | 22  |
| George Morgan House .....                       | 67  |
| Houston, Sam .....                              | 12  |
| Lang, Capt. Willis L. ....                      | 130 |
| Memorial Cabin (Courthouse Square) .....        | 271 |
| Milam, Benjamin Rush (Statue) .....             | 31  |
| Morrell, The Reverend Z. N. ....                | 41  |
| Oltorf, James D. ....                           | 165 |
| Perry, Judge and Mrs. Albert G. ....            | 28  |
| Robertson, Sterling C. (Empresario) .....       | 11  |
| Sam Houston House .....                         | 126 |
| Scenes at Annual Reunion .....                  | 303 |
| Stuart, Judge E. C. ....                        | 268 |
| Viesca Townsite .....                           | 18  |

# INDEX

|  |               |
|--|---------------|
| Acts Creating Falls County .....       | 107, 112, 113 |
| Adams, Allensworth .....               | 110           |
| Adams, First County Seat .....         | 110           |
| Adams, Dr. D. G. (Confederacy) .....   | 128           |
| Advisory Board (World War II) .....    | 229           |
| Aircraft Warning Council .....         | 234           |
| Aircraft Warning Observers .....       | 236           |
| Aircraft Warning System .....          | 235           |
| Airplanes (Early) .....                | 198           |
| Aliens Registered .....                | 213, 227      |
| American Legion Auxiliary Units .....  | 217, 218      |
| American Legion Posts .....            | 217, 218      |
| Appeals Agent, Government .....        | 230           |
| Armed Forces Return .....              | 216, 217, 253 |
| Artifacts, Indian .....                | 90            |
| Atomic Bombs .....                     | 251, 252      |
| Austin, Stephen F. ....                | 10, 14, 26    |
| Automobiles (Early) .....              | 190, 194      |
| Aycock, Capt. John (Confederacy) ..... | 127           |
| Bartlett, Zenas .....                  | 128, 131      |
| Barton, Sheriff L. B. ....             | 181           |
| Bates' Hill .....                      | 176           |
| Bird, Capt. John .....                 | 74, 76        |
| Bird's Fight, Indian .....             | 74            |
| Bird's Fight Marker .....              | 76            |
| Birth of Towns .....                   | 178, 186      |
| Blain, S. A. (Map) .....               | 114, 115      |
| Board, Advisory .....                  | 229           |
| Board, Exemption .....                 | 203           |
| Boards, Rationing .....                | 241, 242, 243 |
| Boards, Selective Service .....        | 227, 228, 229 |
| Bonds Campaigns .....                  | 212, 232, 243 |
| Brazoes River Named .....              | 3             |
| Bridge Collapse (Brazos) .....         | 286           |
| Bryant, Capt. Benjamin .....           | 36, 68, 71    |
| Bryant's Defeat (Indian Battle) .....  | 68            |
| Bryant's Defeat Marker .....           | 72            |
| Bucksnot .....                         | 64            |
| Buffalo Hump (Indian Chief) .....      | 75            |



|   |                    |
|---|--------------------|
| Burke, Sergeant Walter .....            | 210                |
| Byrd, Lieut. Joe Curtis .....           | 248                |
| Camp of Confederate Veterans .....      | 133, 135           |
| Camps, Indian, Indicated .....          | 83                 |
| Canoma (Indian) .....                   | 8                  |
| Captured Japanese Submarine .....       | 248                |
| Carroll, B. H. ....                     | 188                |
| Carter, George H. ....                  | 204                |
| Cattle .....                            | 178, 180           |
| Cattle Brands (Typical) .....           | 182                |
| Cattlemen (Early) .....                 | 182                |
| Chambers, Thomas J. ....                | 23, 24, 257        |
| Childress, George Campbell .....        | 33, 34             |
| Choctaw Tom (Indian) .....              | 9                  |
| Churches, Lots for .....                | 118                |
| Churchill, Winston .....                | 237                |
| Civilian Defense Wardens .....          | 240                |
| Collapse of Brazos Bridge .....         | 286                |
| Commissioners Court (Early) .....       | 109                |
| Company D (World War II) .....          | 231, 232           |
| Company F (World War I) .....           | 205, 207           |
| Confederate Memorial .....              | 157                |
| Confederate Organization .....          | 155                |
| Confederacy, Daughters of (UDC) .....   | 156                |
| Confederate Veterans (List) .....       | 133-155            |
| Conflicting Land Grants .....           | 117, 257           |
| Connally (Tom) Rifles .....             | 212                |
| Connally, U. S. Senator Tom .....       | 212, 222, 237, 275 |
| Conscripted Men (Early) .....           | 208, 209, 230      |
| Controversy, Robertson and Austin ..... | 14                 |
| Coryell, James .....                    | 57, 63             |
| Counties from Milam District .....      | 104                |
| County Officers, Early .....            | 108                |
| County Seat Chosen .....                | 110, 111           |
| County Seat, Location of .....          | 110, 112           |
| County Seat's Names .....               | 110, 112           |
| County Seat, Plans for City .....       | 114                |
| Courthouse Clock (Town) .....           | 271                |
| Courthouse Square Created .....         | 113                |
| Court (District) Officers .....         | 259, 260           |
| Creating Falls County .....             | 107, 112, 113      |

|  |               |
|--|---------------|
| Crocker, Mrs. W. E. (Mary Towers) .....  | 115           |
| Currie, John Morgan .....                | 211           |
| Curry, Lieut. Irby Rice .....            | 210           |
| Curry, Moses H. ....                     | 168           |
| Daughters of the Confederacy (UDC) ..... | 156           |
| Davis, Cyclone .....                     | 188           |
| Davis, E. J. ....                        | 160, 170, 171 |
| Davis, (E. J.) Regime .....              | 163, 171      |
| Davis, Jefferson .....                   | 100           |
| Dawson Massacre .....                    | 91, 96        |
| Dawson Massacre, Men of .....            | 92, 96        |
| Dawson, Capt. Nicholas .....             | 91, 92, 95    |
| Declaration of Independence .....        | 34            |
| Defense, Selective Service .....         | 202, 227      |
| Defense, National, Committee .....       | 233           |
| Defense, Wardens for Civilian .....      | 240           |
| Denson, Nelson (Negro) .....             | 172, 202, 264 |
| Depression of the 1930s .....            | 221           |
| District Court Officers (List) .....     | 259, 260      |
| District, Milam .....                    | 21            |
| District, Viesca .....                   | 15, 27        |
| Draft Boards .....                       | 203, 227      |
| Early County Officers .....              | 108, 110      |
| Eddins, A. W., County School Supt. ....  | 172, 188      |
| Edwards, Dan .....                       | 211           |
| Electric Plants, Early .....             | 189, 190      |
| Electricity for Rural Areas .....        | 224           |
| Elm Creek Fight (Indian) .....           | 53, 62        |
| End of World War I .....                 | 215           |
| End of World War II .....                | 252           |
| Executive Committee .....                | 203           |
| Exemption Board .....                    | 203           |
| Explosives Licensed .....                | 247           |
| Falls County Created .....               | 107, 112, 113 |
| Farley, Postmaster General J. A. ....    | 277, 278      |
| Farm Commodities Rationing Board .....   | 243           |
| Farming, Mechanical .....                | 199           |
| First County Seat .....                  | 110           |
| Fort Marlin .....                        | 64            |
| Fort Milam .....                         | 21, 22        |
| Fortune, John A. ....                    | 67            |

|  |                           |
|--|---------------------------|
| Fund, U. S. War .....                    | 236                       |
| Game, Early .....                        | 44                        |
| Gassaway, George H. and J. T. ....       | 128, 179                  |
| Gates, John W. ....                      | 180                       |
| Galveston Storm .....                    | 193                       |
| Gilmore-Williams-Katool Post (VFW) ..... | 255                       |
| Glass, Dr. T. G. ....                    | 286                       |
| Goddard, The Reverend F. P. ....         | 79-90                     |
| Gore, T. P., U. S. Senator (Blind) ..... | 188                       |
| Government Appeals Agent .....           | 230                       |
| Grafophone .....                         | 191                       |
| Grants, Conflicting Land .....           | 117, 257                  |
| Grant, President U. S. ....              | 161                       |
| Guards, Texas and National .....         | 207, 212, 231             |
| Hancock, Sanford .....                   | 247                       |
| Hanrick, Ed (Land Title) .....           | 257                       |
| Higgins, T. B. ....                      | 277, 278                  |
| Hightower, Capt. Thomas P. ....          | 128                       |
| Highways .....                           | 197                       |
| Hitler, Adolph .....                     | 224                       |
| Hill, Bates' .....                       | 176                       |
| House, George Morgan .....               | 66, 67                    |
| House, Sam Houston .....                 | 126                       |
| Houston, Sam .....                       | 12, 17, 29, 124, 126, 130 |
| Hunnicutt, Lee V. ....                   | 211                       |
| Hunt, Michael S. ....                    | 221                       |
| Indian Artifacts .....                   | 90                        |
| Indian Battles, Fights and Massacres     |                           |
| Bird's Fight .....                       | 74, 76                    |
| Fort Marlin Attack .....                 | 64, 68                    |
| Morgan Massacre .....                    | 65                        |
| Morgan's Point (Bryant's Defeat) .....   | 68, 72                    |
| Indian Camps Indicated .....             | 83                        |
| Indian Trails Indicated .....            | 80                        |
| Inductees (Early) .....                  | 230                       |
| Jail .....                               | 119                       |
| Japanese Submarine Shown .....           | 248                       |
| Jolly, John M. ....                      | 157                       |
| Jones, Churchill .....                   | 121, 129, 171, 264, 281   |
| Jose Maria, Indian Chief .....           | 69, 71                    |
| Killebrew, Buck .....                    | 67                        |



|  |                    |
|--|--------------------|
| Kirkpatrick, J. R. ....                        | 261, 262           |
| Ku Klux Klan .....                             | 220                |
| Land Grants, Conflicting .....                 | 117, 257           |
| Lang, Capt. Willis L. (Confederacy) .....      | 127, 130, 155      |
| Lang, Willis L., Camp of Confederate Vet. .... | 155                |
| Leftwich, Robert .....                         | 11                 |
| Legal Advisory Board .....                     | 204                |
| Legion Auxiliary Units .....                   | 217, 218           |
| Legion Posts .....                             | 217, 218           |
| Legion, Sons of .....                          | 217                |
| Levy, Marx .....                               | 186                |
| Lincoln, President A. ....                     | 159                |
| Lives Lost in World Wars I and II .....        | 210, 248, 249      |
| Location of County Seat .....                  | 110, 112           |
| Los Brazos de Dios .....                       | 3, 279             |
| Mail (Overseas) Restricted .....               | 247                |
| Marlin, Fort .....                             | 64                 |
| Marlin, John .....                             | 64, 68             |
| Marlin, Fort, Marker .....                     | 64                 |
| Martin, J. A. ....                             | 177                |
| Massacre, Dawson .....                         | 91                 |
| Massacre, Morgan .....                         | 65                 |
| McKay, Daniel .....                            | 36                 |
| McComb, William .....                          | 67, 266            |
| McComb, Mrs. William .....                     | 67                 |
| McCullough, Tom L. ....                        | 165                |
| Mechanical Farming .....                       | 199                |
| Memorial Cabin (Courthouse Square) .....       | 156                |
| Memorial, Confederate .....                    | 157                |
| Memorial, Dawson Massacre, Mier .....          | 95                 |
| Men in U.S.-Mexican War .....                  | 98                 |
| Mier Expedition .....                          | 93                 |
| Mier Expedition, Men of .....                  | 93, 96             |
| Milam District .....                           | 21, 104            |
| Milam, Fort .....                              | 21                 |
| Milam, Benjamin Rush .....                     | 26, 29, 30, 31     |
| Milam District, Counties Therefrom .....       | 104                |
| Military Draft .....                           | 203, 227           |
| Mills, Roger Q. (Congressman) .....            | 188                |
| Moffit, Mrs. J. P. (Grandma) .....             | 37                 |
| Morgan, George .....                           | 32, 65, 66, 68, 72 |

|  |                                 |
|--|---------------------------------|
| Morgan's Point, Battle of .....                | 68                              |
| Morgan's Post Marker .....                     | 72                              |
| Morgan Massacre .....                          | 65                              |
| Morrell, Allen H. ....                         | 303, 24, 92, 101, 114, 117      |
| Morrell, The Reverend Z. N. ....               | 9, 41, 58, 59, 118              |
| Mussolini, Benito .....                        | 225                             |
| National Defense Committee .....               | 233                             |
| National Guard .....                           | 207, 212                        |
| Nathan, I. J. ....                             | 190                             |
| Negroes .....                                  | 171, 172, 183, 185              |
| Negroes in Politics .....                      | 172, 183                        |
| Norwood, Embro (Negro) .....                   | 177, 265                        |
| Officers, County (Early) .....                 | 108, 110                        |
| Old Settlers and Vet. Ass'n., Presidents ..... | 298                             |
| Oliver, Judge J. W. ....                       | 164, 169, 264                   |
| Oltorf, Frank C. ....                          | 121-157                         |
| Oltorf, James D. ....                          | 126, 164, 165, 168, 169         |
| OPA, Office of Price Administration .....      | 241, 242, 243                   |
| Organizations, "Three-Letter" .....            | 222                             |
| Overseas Mail Restricted .....                 | 247                             |
| Perry, Albert G. ....                          | 20, 25, 27, 29, 178             |
| Petition for a County .....                    | 104                             |
| Pictures, Talking (Sound) .....                | 220                             |
| Pierson, Edmund .....                          | 294, 18, 19                     |
| Pierson, J. G. W. ....                         | 17, 20, 24, 25, 27, 93, 94, 117 |
| Politics, Negroes in .....                     | 172                             |
| Political Parties .....                        | 184                             |
| Point, Morgan's .....                          | 68                              |
| Posts, American Legion .....                   | 217, 218                        |
| Postmaster General, J. A. Farley .....         | 277                             |
| Posts, Veterans of Foreign Wars .....          | 254                             |
| Price and Rationing Boards .....               | 241, 243                        |
| Prisoners of War .....                         | 245                             |
| Radicalism Ends .....                          | 170                             |
| Railroads .....                                | 176, 186                        |
| Ranger Company (Capt. Robertson) .....         | 32                              |
| Rationing Boards .....                         | 241, 243                        |
| Reagan, W. R. ....                             | 178                             |
| Recruiting, War Between States .....           | 127                             |
| Regime, E. J. Davis .....                      | 163, 171                        |
| Religious Progress .....                       | 188                             |

|  |                        |
|--|------------------------|
| Return of Armed Forces .....                 | 217, 253               |
| Rifles, Tom Connally .....                   | 212                    |
| Robertson, Sterling C. (Empresario) .....    | 11, 17, 20, 32, 33     |
| Robertson, Mrs. W. G. ....                   | 156                    |
| Ross, W. I. ....                             | 222                    |
| Runaway Scrape .....                         | 35                     |
| San Jacinto, Battle of .....                 | 35                     |
| Secession, County Votes for .....            | 127                    |
| Selective Service Acts .....                 | 202, 227               |
| Selective Service Boards .....               | 203, 227               |
| Shelton, William .....                       | 184                    |
| Shields, Benjamin G. ....                    | 122, 124, 129          |
| Singer, Capt. Edgar C. ....                  | 131                    |
| Size of County Changed? .....                | 112                    |
| Slaves .....                                 | 123, 163               |
| Smith, Capt. E. B. (U.S.-Mexican War) .....  | 98                     |
| Sons of American Legion .....                | 217                    |
| Sound (Talking) Pictures .....               | 220                    |
| Spanish-American War .....                   | 191, 193               |
| Spanish American War Veterans .....          | 192, 193               |
| Square, Courthouse, Created .....            | 113                    |
| Steele, Alphonso F. ....                     | 36                     |
| Stockholders, Robertson's Nashville Co. .... | 12                     |
| Stuart, Judge E. C. ....                     | 267, 268               |
| "Stump" Speakers .....                       | 187                    |
| Submarine, Japanese, Shown .....             | 248                    |
| Surrender of Enemies .....                   | 215, 251, 252          |
| Talking Machines (Grafophone) .....          | 190, 191               |
| Talking (Sound) Pictures .....               | 220                    |
| Texas State Guard .....                      | 231, 232               |
| "Three-Letter" Organizations .....           | 222                    |
| Tom Connally Rifles .....                    | 212                    |
| Town Clock (Courthouse) .....                | 271                    |
| Towns, Birth of .....                        | 178, 186, 187          |
| Townsite, Marlin .....                       | 114                    |
| Townsite, Viesca .....                       | 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22 |
| Trails, Indian, Indicated .....              | 80                     |
| Transportation, Early .....                  | 175                    |
| Trucks Registered (World War II) .....       | 241                    |
| UDC, President, Mrs. W. G. Robertson .....   | 156                    |
| UDC, United Daughters of Confederacy .....   | 156                    |



|   |                         |
|---|-------------------------|
| United Service Organization (USO) .....       | 236                     |
| Units, Auxiliaries of Legion and VFW .....    | 217, 218, 255           |
| U. S. War Fund .....                          | 236                     |
| U. S.-Mexican War .....                       | 97, 100                 |
| U. S.-Mexican War, Men of .....               | 98, 99                  |
| Viesca .....                                  | 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22  |
| Viesca District .....                         | 15, 17, 21              |
| Veterans Auxiliaries (Legion and VFW) .....   | 218, 255                |
| Veterans                                      |                         |
| Confederates, List of .....                   | 133-155                 |
| Spanish-American War .....                    | 192, 193                |
| U. S.-Mexican War .....                       | 98, 99                  |
| War Veterans Organize .....                   | 133, 155, 217, 218, 254 |
| Veterans Sons Organize .....                  | 217                     |
| War Bonds Campaign .....                      | 212, 236, 243           |
| Wardens, Civilian Defense .....               | 240                     |
| War Funds, U. S. ....                         | 236                     |
| Warning Council, Aircraft .....               | 234                     |
| Warning System, Aircraft .....                | 235                     |
| Welle, Gus .....                              | 190                     |
| Willis L. Lang Camp of Confederate Vets. .... | 133, 155                |
| Women in War .....                            | 249                     |
| Woodland, Henry .....                         | 94, 99                  |
| World War I .....                             | 201-218                 |
| World War II .....                            | 239-256                 |

